

CHAPTER 20:

Revelation Chapter 20 begins the part of the Book of Revelation that I call **'The Post Tribulation Period for Mortal Man'**, which will last 1,000 years and is known as **'The Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Planet Earth'**.

Also, while reading the words of this chapter, keep in mind, these will be the **'Last Words That God Will Provide Humanity About (activities or events) → The First Creation'**. This chapter is broken down into four specific topics, which are as follows:

First Topic:

Verses 1-3 → **'Describes the Capture & Chaining & Incarceration (in the Abyss) of → Satan for 1,000 years and then Satan's Release'**

Second Topic:

Verses 4-6 → **'Describes the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ and those (saints) that will be Ruling with Him'**

Third Topic:

Verses 7-10 → **'Describes a 'Specific Event' that will take place on Earth after the Release of Satan's 1,000 year Incarceration: This Specific Event will come JUST after the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ'**

Fourth Topic:

Verses 11-15 → **'Describes the Great White Throne Judgment by God the Father'**

ADDITIONAL NOTES:

However, before we begin I would like to provide a little background on this chapter. This is the only chapter in the Bible that specifically speaks about the **'1,000 years reign of Jesus Christ on Earth, which we translate as' → 'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ'**. Currently there are three specific views as to interpret this

'Millennial—1,000 year Concept', which I will list and discuss, and then you can decide for yourself which one you believe?

First View → Post—millennialism,

This view assumes that Jesus Christ will not return until the **'End of the 1,000 years'**. This would mean that Jesus Christ would not rule during the 1,000 years and would only return because of man's preaching of the gospel, which would create a **'World Wide Evangelism Explosion'** and the majority of the earth would turn to God. This view began during the **'Philadelphia Church Period'** → known as the **'Evangelism Church', ~ 1,800-1950**. This church period was truly a great period for the spreading the **'Gospel of Jesus Christ'** and second only to the **'First Church Period—Ephesus'**. However, this concept has become all but **'Obsolete'** because of → **'WW 1 → WW 2 → a World Depression → the 'Russia—American Cold War → Korean War → Invention of Nuclear Weapons → the Creation of Communism → the Rise of Islam → the Great Falling Away from Christianity → and the World Wide Hardening of the Human Hearts Toward the God of Creation'!** Also, this view is in direct conflict with Rev. 20:4b, **"They came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years."** Again, in my opinion, this view should have never been 'created—written' and has been abandoned by almost everyone who has any understanding of the **'Human Heart and Scripture'**. **Note:** This appears to be a good example of **'Men'** taking a very small snap shot of **'current events'** and making general assumptions; while engorging the rest of scripture. Again, read all of scripture; pray → and then re-read all of scripture and then decide!

SECOND VIEW → A—millennialism,

This view has become popular within our lifetime and believes that there will not be an actual **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth at All'**, instead the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ'** will occur in → **'Heaven'**, and end at the end of the **'Tribulation Period on Earth'**, → and like the **'Post—millennialist'**, they believe that Jesus Christ will not return to earth until the end of the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ in Heaven'**. Also, they believe that we are currently living during the **'Millennial Period'** → and all of the **'Actual Historical Events'** that are

described in **'World History & Especially in Revelation'** will be during **'Jesus Christ Millennial Period in Heaven'**. They also **'Spiritualize the Entire Millennial Period and the Entire Book of Revelation'** → Based on all of the other scripture within the Bible → This view does not make any sense on so many levels, I will not even waste our time with comment or scripture, however, if you want → in class we can discuss! **When did the 1,000 years begin and when will it end → Timing, Unknown?**

Note: However, I will say one thing → If you start taking scripture **'Spiritually'** when the words are **'Literal and other Scripture Validate the Literal Interpretation'** → where does this stop? Using this concept—men can make scripture say anything they want! Sounds like what men have done all down through time—and today!

THIRD VIEW → Pre—millennialism,

This view believes that **'The Entire Book of Revelation'** and the entire Bible for that matter, should be taken **'Literally'**, unless symbolism is specifically stated. This view believes that Jesus Christ will return to earth at the end of the **'Tribulation Period'** → to end this period and then physically rule the physical—mortal earth for 1,000 years. Also, if you read the first 7 verses of this chapter you will find that the words **"one thousand years"** are repeated **'6'** times:

- 1) vs. 2b, "...Satan, and bound him for one thousand years..."**
- 2) vs. 3b, "...to keep him from deceiving the nations any more until the thousand years were ended."**
- 3) vs. 4b, "They came to life and ruled with Christ a thousand years."**
- 4) vs. 5a, "The rest did not come to life until the thousand years were ended."**
- 5) vs. 6b, "...but they will be priest of God and of Christ and will reign with Him (Christ) for a thousand years."**
- 6) vs. 7a, "when the thousand years are over, Satan will be released for prison and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth..."**

Based on the above it sounds like to me God – really, really, really meant → **‘ONE THOUSAND YEARS’**.

Also, if you go back and look at the believes of the first church period you will find that they believed in the **‘Literal Interpretation’** of a **‘One Thousand Year Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth’** (as well as, all other scripture) and only in recent years **‘1,800-1,950—Church of Philadelphia’** have people began to believe in the **‘Spiritual View of Scripture’**, including man ushering in **‘Heaven on Earth’**. I think the **‘Actual Actions of Men’** over the last 50-60 years has ended this type of thinking!

Details on First Topic—Verses 1-3:

Again, the **‘First Topic’** in this chapter **‘Describes the Capture—Chaining & Incarceration of Satan after the Battle of Armageddon for 1,000 years. (Note: Satan’s will be Released to DECEIVE the nations of the earth; after his 1,000 years of incarceration/in the Abyss)** → Satan’s incarceration is covered in Rev. 20:1-3. However, before we begin our detailed study of these first three verses, I think it is worth reading them and then setting back and **‘Really Looking at What They are Saying’** →

Verse 1: “And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, → having the key to the Abyss → and holding in his hand a great chain. → Verse 2: He seized the dragon, → that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and → bound him for a thousand years. → Verse 3: He threw him into the Abyss, → and locked and sealed it over him, → to keep him from deceiving the nations any more → until the thousand years were ended. → After that, he must be set free for a short time.”

If there was ever **‘Any Doubt in Any Anyone’s Mind’** as to → **‘Who is the All Powerful Creator’**, these verses should **‘Clear that Up’** → **‘If they want/seeking to ‘Hear’ the Truth’**.

“I am the Lord, and there is no other; apart from Me there is no God.” Isa. 45:5

I have re-state Isaiah's words below → In the 'Mental Picture' that came to my mind, after reading them. What mental picture comes to your mind?

'God is the One Creator of Everything and Could Have Destroyed All of Physical Creation and Spiritual Creation at Any Time He—God Wanted To' and This Would Have Included Satan'. Actually, in Rev. 21:1, God does just that → **"Then I saw a new**

heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea."

Now I will begin our detailed study, by breaking these verses down by topic, as follows:

Part One: The, Capture & Chaining & Incarceration (Abyss) of Satan after the Battle of Armageddon for 1,000 years.

Verses 1:

Verse 1: "And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, → having the key to the Abyss → and holding in his hand a great chain." To me the overview of this verse speaks to the issue of → **'Power & Authority—and Where It is Coming From-Heaven'**. Also, I think God has provided the reader with three separate sub-sets about this **'Power & Authority'**, as follows:

Verse 1, Part 1:

"And I saw → an angel → coming down out of heaven..." To me these words provide the reader with three specific pieces of information:

a) John is letting the reader know that what he is about to describe or talk about is either a new topic or event, → **"And I saw..."** remember, Revelations Chapter 19 ended with the **'Second Coming of Jesus—and the 'Killing/Death' of All Unsaved People on Earth'**. Again, this should be viewed as a new topic/part of John's vision.

b) The next two words make it clear that, what John is seeing in the next part of his vision is, "...an angel...". I think it is interesting that God begins Revelation Chapter 20 begins with "...an angel..." and that He/God does not provide the reader with any **'background on this angel'** like He/God has done in many other chapters in the Book of Revelation. Also, keep in mind when reading these words that this **'angel'** was, in my opinion, the most powerful angel that we have seen in the Book of Revelation, based on the **'Task that God has given him' → 'The Actual Physical—Incarceration of Satan'**. I will list two other events, where God used angels to accomplish **'His Will in the End Times Events'**,

One: God sent an **'angel'** to show John the **'Punishment—Destruction of the Capital City of the One World Religious System'**, Rev. 17:1, "One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and said to me, 'Come, I will show you the punishment of the great prostitute, who sits on many waters.'" Keep in mind that this angel is only showing John the **'punishment'** and not actually doing the **'Punishment'**.

Two: In Revelation Chapter 18 God sends an **'angel'** to **'announce'** the **'Punishment—Destruction' of 'Babylon—the Capital City of the antichrist's—One World Government—Economic & Religious System'**. Rev. 18:1-2a, "After this I saw another angel coming down from heaven. He had great authority, and the earth was illuminated by his splendor, With a mighty voice he shouted..." Keep in mind when reading this chapter, it is unclear, if this angel is playing any part in the **'Punishment—Destruction'** or just making the Announcement?

Three: In Revelation Chapter 8 & 9, God actually used **'Angels'** to open all seven of the **'Trumpet Judgments'**. I will not quote these two chapters. Also, I think if you go back and read the entire Bible you will find that God has used **'angels'** in many places and for many reasons. However, I cannot find anywhere in scripture God has given so much **'Power & Authority'** to a specific angel—Again, just my opinion.

3) The angel is coming from heaven to earth, "...coming down out of heaven..." To me God put these words in to for two reasons:

One: To confirm that the **'Power & Authority'** that this angels possesses is from God.

Two: To again confirms that Satan has been expelled from heaven to earth Rev. 12: 7-9, not quoted.

Verse 1, Part 2:

"...having the key to the Abyss..." To me these words provide the reader with three additional pieces of information about the **'Power & Authority'** that this specific angel has been granted by God.

Note: (Actually if you think about it: God always gives **'His Servants'** the **'Power & Authority'**, they need to do the Job that He/God has asked them to do.)

a) This specific angel has the key to the Abyss, therefore, he (the angel) can **'lock or unlock'** the Abyss!

b) Based on the language within these words, it appears to me that there is only one key to the Abyss, and, given the angel came from heaven, the key must have been previously held by **God the Father—In Heaven.**

c) As I have said, there is only one **"...key to the Abyss..."**, however, based on the all of the words within the **Book of Revelation**, it would appear that God **'gives and takes this "key" back at least twice'**. See Rev. 9:1-2 below

Note: However, I believe to correctly understand what these words are saying we must first understanding the word **"Abyss"**. Definition by Webster's: **'A bottomless or unfathomed depth, gulf, or chasm—specifically, hell, or the bottomless pit'**. Based on this definition and the verses listed below we can **'Say with Confidence'** that the **"Abyss"** is a **'Place where you do not want to go'**: Now I will list several verses, which reference the word **"Abyss"**, or the **'Concept of the Abyss'**:

Jude 6, "And the angels who did not keep their position of authority but abandoned their own home—theses He (God) has kept in darkness, bound

with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day.” Notice the word “chains” which is also used in our verse.

Peter, 2:6a, “For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, putting them into dungeons (into chains of darkness) to be held for judgment...”

Luke 8:31, “Jesus asked him, ‘What is your name?’ Legion, he replied, because many demons had gone into him. And they begged Him repeatedly not to order them to go into the Abyss.”

Now less focus on scripture in the Book of Revelation:

Rev. 9:1-2, “The fifth angel sounded his trumpet and I saw a star that had fallen from the sky to the earth. The star was given the key to the shaft of the Abyss. When he opened the Abyss, smoke rose from it the smoke from a gigantic furnace.” The “star” in this verse is talking about Satan and when he was expelled from heaven, Rev. 12:7-9 and it appears based on the wording, that at this point in time God has given the “key to the Abyss” to Satan, “The star was given the key to the shaft of the Abyss.” Scripture does not tell us, when God took this “key” back so that He/God could give it to the angel in our verse! It appears to me, that Satan was given possession of the “key” just before the mid-point of the seven year tribulation period and now our angel has possession of the “key” just after the ‘Battle of Armageddon’. The two events would be separated by a little over a three & one half year period.

Rev. 9:11, “They had as king over them an angel of the Abyss, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek, Apollyon.”

Note: I think to correctly understand this verse, you first need to understand the meaning of the words: “...Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek, Apollyon.”, which both mean: ‘A place (pit) of destruction of doom or ruin.’ These words are also used 5 times in the Old Testament, and are always used to describe; Sheol – death – the grave.

Job. 26:6, “Death (Sheol) is naked before God; Destruction (Abaddon) lies uncovered.”

Psalms 88:11, “Is your love declared in the grave, your faithfulness in Destruction (Abaddon).”

Proverbs 15:11, “Death and Destruction (Abaddon) lie open for the Lord—how much more the heart of men!” also, see Job 28:22

Job 31:12, “It is a fire that burns to Destruction (Abaddon), it would have unrooted MY harvest.”

Old Testament—Conclusion: Again, it appears to that these words in the Old Testament mean: ‘The Lower Side of Sheol or Hell’ and would be the same in our verse.

NEXT →

Rev. 11:7, “Now when they (the two witnesses) have finished their testimony, the beast that comes up from the Abyss will attack them, and overpower and kill them.”

Based on the chronological order that the book of Revelation was written in and the specific scripture used: It appears that this event is at the mid-point of the seven year tribulation period—and is speaking about after the antichrist mortal wound and will have descended into the Abyss at his death. However, he the antichrist, will be healed by Satan → Again, this is just my opinion, read and make up your own mind.

However, the next verse speaks about the same event (the mortal wound of the antichrist) and the timing is the same?

Rev. 17:8, “The beast, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss and go his destruction.” Again, this is the same description of the antichrist and the timing is the same?

Now, our verses **Rev. 20:1-2, “And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, having the key to the Abyss and holding in his hand a great chain. He seized**

the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. He threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him for a thousand years."

Again, based on these descriptions and events, I believe God is telling the reader that the "Abyss" is a 'Holding Place for Rebellious Created Beings' and there is only two ways in which they will be released:

1) To do Gods Bidding, Rev. 20:7-10 or

2) To be Judged and sent to → 'The Lake of Burning Fire', Jude 6; to long to quote all , focus on verse 6, "And the angels who did not keep their passion of authority but abandoned their own home—these He/God has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the Great Day." Notice any similar concepts/words: "...these He/God has kept in darkness.." → "...bound with everlasting chains..." → "...for judgment on the Great Day."

I think it is also possible that this is the same type of structure that is being described in Rev. 9: 13-16, "The sixth angel blew his trumpet, and I heard a voice coming from the horns of the golden altar that is before God. It said to the sixth angel who had the sixth trumpet, 'Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates.' And the four angels who had been kept ready for this very hour and day and month and years..." Again, not sure, but they are being help somewhere for God purpose and it speaks about **JUDGMENT**. If you continue to read the next part of this verse Rev. 9:16b, → "...were released to kill a third of mankind." This sounds a lot like Judgment and also the "four angels" are being held actually "bound", because they had to be "released".

3) The other possible reason that I could see, where '**fallen angels**' would be released is → '**For the Great White Throne Judgment**'. However, not everyone believes that the angels will go through the '**Great White Throne Judgment**', as it is limited to only humans. Again, you decide. Again, read a make up your own mind about these concepts.

Verse 1, Part 3:

“...and holding in his hand a great chain...” To me in these words God begins to let the reader know the **‘intensions’** of this specific angel or **‘Exactly what God has Given him the Power & Authority, to do’**. I also believe that these words should be viewed as the second part of # 2 above. Also people of all generations would associate words like, **“...key...Abyss...great chains...”** as speaking about **‘judgment and penalty’**.

Verse 2: He seized the dragon, → that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and → bound him for a thousand years. To me this section has six pieces of specific information about the **‘Actions’** that the angel, sent by God, is about to do. Also, keep in mind the:

ONE: Timing → The Next Event, after the Battle of Armageddon’ and

TWO: Reason → So that Satan will not be able to Deceive the nations During the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth’.

Now begin our study of the six specific pieces of information within this verse, which are as follows:

Verse 2: “He seized the dragon, → that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and → bound him for a thousand years.

In this verse, God begins to provide the reader, with words, that will begin to define **‘the intension of the angel’** we discussed in verse 1.

Also, notice the wording in, Rev. 12:9a, **“The great dragon was hurled down— that ancient serpent called the devil or Satan, who leads the whole world astray.”** Notice all three names are used in this verse! Also, notice that in this verse, Rev. 12:9a: It speaks about this same concept, except in Rev. 12:9a, Satan is being expelled from the first heaven and now in our verse; Satan is being expelled from the earth – first creation → Except this time he/Satan has to go into the Abyss—as there is no other part of creation for him,/Satan to be sent too’.

Verse 2, Part 1:

“He seized the dragon...” To me these four words are very specific as to what the **‘He/angel’** did to **‘the dragon’** → **“He seized the dragon...”** meaning the angel **‘seized—grabbed hold of and did not let go’**. I think these four words also validates our original assumption that → **‘This angel was given Great power by God’** and **‘Confirms the Intension of This Angel’**.

Verse 2, Part 2:

In the next part of verse 2, God provides the reader with **‘three’** additional names that the **“dragon”** has been called in the Bible, **“...that ancient serpent, → who is the devil → or Satan...”** I will provide verses that I think describe these names throughout human history:

First Name: **“...that ancient serpent...”** I like these verses because:

Step 1) ‘This is where he/Satan entered Human history’, Gen. 3:1, **“Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the Lord God had made. He said to the woman. ‘Did God really say’, ‘You must not eat from any three in the garden’.”** Gen. 3:14, **“So the Lord said to the serpent, ‘Because you have done this’, ‘Cursed are you above all the livestock and all of the wild animals!’”**

Step 2) The effects of this **‘One Event on Humanity’**, by the **“serpent”** → **‘From the beginning of Mortal Man Until the end of Mortal Man’**, 2 Cor. 11:3, **“But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent’s cunning, your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ.”** To me this is a very sad verse but very true in all Christians lives no matter how much we try to avoid it! Also, it would be true in all unsaved humans lives as well!

3) ‘This Process of deception, by the “serpent” will continue until the End of The First Creation’, Rev. 20: 10, **“And the devil, (serpent) who deceived them, was thrown into two the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”**

Second Name: “...who is the devil...” Again, I like these verses because it speaks about the:

1) ‘Mission of the devil’, 1 Peter 5:8, “Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like roaring lion looking for someone to devour.”

2) ‘The end of the devil’ Matt. 25:41, “Then He will say to those on the left, ‘Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’”

Third Name: “...or Satan...” I like these verses because they speak about:

1) ‘The Fall of Satan—Pride’, Isa, 14:12-15, quote, 13-14, “You said in your heart, → ‘I will ascend to heaven; → I will raise my throne above the stars of God; → I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountains. → I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; → I will make myself like the Most High’.”

2) ‘Satan’s antichrist’, 2 Thess. 2:9-10, “The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the works of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs, and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing.”

3) ‘When Satan was Cast-Out of Heaven’, Rev. 12:9-10, “The great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil or Satan, who leads the whole world astray.” Notice all three names are used here!

4) ‘Speaks about the final Judgment—Destruction of Satan’, Rev. 20:7-10, “When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from prison...the devil...was thrown in to the lake of burning sulfur...they will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”

In our detailed analysis of the four names that God used in Rev. 20;2a, “dragon—Satan—devil—the serpent” I have tried to pick scripture that describe or provide details about the ‘History of this Being → Isa. 14:12, “How you have fallen from

heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn!” Satan to start was so ‘High and Close to God, Himself’ and ended up so ‘Low’. It is past my comprehension, to Understand this kind of Rebellion → However, we have to remember → ‘AS HUMANS—WE DO IT EVERY DAY’!

Verse 2, Part 3:

“...and bound him for a thousand years.” To me these words should be taken literally and: It is also establishing the **‘Time Frame’** where Satan will not be able to directly **‘Tempt or Deceive Humans’**, which is → during the 1,000 year Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth. During this 1,000 years period all humans will only be driven by their **‘Own Evil Desires and Rebellious Human Nature’**. Again, humanity will not be able to blame anyone else except themselves for their **‘Rebellious and Evil Actions’** → there will be no passing the buck during this period!

I will list some of the scriptures that I believe can shed some light on this issue, and why humans are as sinful as they are without any help from Satan, as follows:

Psalm 51:5, Humanity from the start, **“Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me.”**

Jer. 17:9, I like this one, **“The heart is deceitful above all things and beyond cure. Who can understand it?”**

Eccl. 7:20, All Humans, **“There is not a righteous man on earth who does what is right and never sins.”** **Romans 3:23**, **“...for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”** **2 Chron. 6:36**, **“...for there is no one who does not sin—and you become angry with them and give them over to the enemy...”** **1 John 1:8**, **“If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us.”**

I think in these last verses, God makes it clear where man’s heart is until he **‘Repents and is Saved’** and even then it is a struggle!

Gen. 6:5, **“The Lord saw how great man’s wickedness was on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his hearth was only evil all**

of the time.” Matt. 15:19, “For out of the heart comes evil thoughts, murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, false testimony, slander.”

Again, during the ‘1,000 year Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth’ Satan will be locked away and not be able to deceive any human during this 1,000 year period → Jesus Christ will actually be ‘Walking the Earth with Humanity to Set the EXAMPLE, Once again for Men’. Next we are told, how many— (appears to be most of the people living on the earth at the end of the 1,000 year period) — react to Satan being released: Rev. 20:7-8, “when the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle. In number they are like the sands of the seashore.” As I have said before I cannot even begin to understand what is in the minds of these people, after they walked with Jesus and see firsthand, ‘His Love & Goodness’. The only think that I can think of is they are so self-absorbed in their own ‘Human—Physical Desires’ that there is no room for God left within their hearts. I have tried to provide scripture that speaks to this issue, but, even as ‘Harsh as These Description are of Humans’ I am not sure it will ‘Fully Describes the Hearts of these Specific Humans’,

Romans 1:28-32, “Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, → He—God gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. Now in verse 29b-32 God list some of the sins of their Heart. “They are full of envy → murder → strife → deceit → and malice. They are gossips, → slanderers, → God haters, → insolent, → arrogant, → and boastful; → they invent ways of doing evil; → they disobey their parents; → they are senseless, → faithless, → heartless, → ruthless. Although they know Gods righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death, → they do not only continue to do these very things but → they approve of those who practice them.” Remember these are ‘God’s Words Describing Humanity’!

Also, go back and re-read the verses I listed above: Ps. 51:5 & Eccl. 7:20 & Matt. 15:19: All of which I think pretty well describes the **'Un-Repentant Hearts of Human's'**, but I especially like this verse, **Gen. 6:5, "The Lord saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his hearth was only evil all of the time."** and even **'Repentant—Saved People'** have to ask God ever day to help them fight these **'Human Urges'**. There are many verses within scripture that speak to this issue, but I like these: 2 Tim. 1:7, **"For God did not give us a spirit of (timidity—fear—fearfulness), but a spirit of Power, of Love and of (Self-Discipline/self-Control/Sound Mind)."** I have highlighted the words from several translations to help us gain a better understanding of this verse.

Also, how God provides **'Power & Strength'** to those who ask Him, Ps. 138:3, H.T., **"You answered me in the day that I cried. You emboldened me in my soul and strength."** I especially like this one, Phil. 4:13, **"I can do all things through Christ, the One giving me power."** Other good verses, Ps. 18:1-2 & Ps. 18:32 & Ps. 22:19 & Ps. 28:7-8 & Ex. 15:2 & 2 Sam. 22:3 & 1 Choro. 16:11 & Isa. 12:2 & I like this one too, Zech. 4:6, **"So he said to me, 'This is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel: Not by might nor by power, but by My spirit', says the Lord Almighty."** These verses all speak to the issue of **'Where Men can get the Strength and Power'** to with-stand the **'Deception and Lies of Satan, as well as, Their Own'** during all periods, but especially during the **'Tribulation's and It appears during the 1,000 year reign of Jesus Christ on earth'**! Remember at this point in time, (the end of the 1,000 years reign of Jesus Christ on earth) Satan will know about what will happen next → **'his/Satan's Release and Satan's Final Battle with God/Jesus, which Satan will lose'** and will be thrown into → **'THE BURNING LAKE OF FIRE—SULFUR FOR ALL OF ETERNITY'**.

NOTE: It is my opinion that if you read the scripture that you will find that; Satan is one of the three **'created beings'** that will **By-Pass** the **'Great White Thrown Judgment'** and **'Go Directly to the Like of Burning Sulfur'**; Rev. 20:10. The other two **'created beings'** were the **'antichrist & false prophet'**; Rev. 19:19-20. Always keep in mind when reading about or thinking about these three **'created beings'**,

(based on scripture), that they should always be viewed as the **'trinity of evil or trinity of anti-god'**!

Now back to our subject of → How could the Humans that just lived and walked the earth with Jesus Christ for 1,000 years and experienced His Love and Goodness' → **'Allow Satan, to once again Deceive them and then → Rebel against Jesus Christ'**? Remember this is the same Jesus who just **'Loved & Provide for their Every Need for 1,000 Years'**. Seems to be hard to believe, however, scripture always provides **'All Humans'** with **'Answers to our Question'**, and I think the answer is in a scripture we have already quoted, **Jer. 17:9, "The heart is deceitful above all things and beyond cure. Who can understand it?"**

To me if you do not **'Ask God Every Day to Guard the Door to Your HEART'** → Satan and his demons can slowly creep in and take up residence. To me these verses make this very clear: Prov. 4:23, **"Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it."** The New Living Translation, **"Guard your heart above all else, for it determines the course of your life."**

I think the other ways to look at this issue is that **'What is God's—Jesus's: cannot be Taken from Him'**, John 10:27-30, **"My sheep listen to My voice; I know them, and they follow Me. I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of My hands. My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; no one can snatch them out of My Father's hand, I and the Father are one."** I think these verses speak to the issue of → **'Once Saved, Always Saved'**.

The other verses that I like which speak about this same issue are: Isa. 22:22, **"I will place on His shoulders the key to the house of David; what He opens no one can shut, and what He shuts no one can open."** And in Revelation Jesus Christ, Himself gives us these words, Rev. 3:7b-8, **"These are the words of Him who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. What He opens no one can shut; and what he shuts no one can open. I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door that no one can shut. (I know that you have little strength, (I think these words tell us that God knows—Exactly How Weak We Really Are) yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name."**

PART TWO → The Timing and Location of the Incarceration of Satan:

Verse 3:

“He (the angel) threw him (Satan) into the Abyss, → and locked and sealed it over him, (Satan) → to keep him (Satan) from deceiving the nations any more → until the thousand years were ended. → After that, he (Satan) must be set free for a short time.” To me this verse provides the reader with five additional pieces of information, not provided in verses 1-2; and specifically about Satan, which are as follows:

Verse 3, Part 1: “He threw him (Satan) into the Abyss...” We talked a lot about the **“Abyss”** back in **‘Verse 1, Part 2,** which told us **“And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven, having the key to the Abyss...”** I think the implication is: The angel has → **“...the key to the Abyss...”** and is going to unlock it; and the next action by the angel will be → **“He threw him (Satan) into the Abyss...”**

I think a secondary implication to our verse is: **‘A Holding Place where God Keeps Rebellious Created Beings—Awaiting, Future Judgment or Some Future USE that God will have for Them.** However, this place **“the Abyss”** appears to be used exclusively for → **Satan and his fallen Angels).** This event will be described in Rev. 20:7-10. **Note:** It appears to me that the Bible uses the word **‘Abyss’** to describe where **‘Satan and his Fallen Angels’** will be held, awaiting their final judgement; Satan, first will go to the **‘Abyss’**, Rev. 20:3a (our verse) and then will go directly to the **‘Lake of Burning Sulfur/Fire’**, Rev. 20:10. The **‘Fallen Angels’**, I believe will be held in the **‘Abyss’** (Jude 6) or awaiting for God to use them in the **‘End Times Judgments’**, example: **‘Fifth Trumpet Judgement’**, Rev. 9:1-12, quote: 1b, **“The star was given the key to the Abyss.”** And then they (fallen angels) will all go through the, **‘Great White Throne Judgment’**. Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own minds.

Verse 3, Part 2: “...and locked and sealed it over him...” To me the meaning of these 7 words concludes the **‘physical action portion’** of verses 1a-3 →

Step One: The angel comes down out of heaven,

Step Two: The angel has the key to the Abyss,

Step Three: The angel also has, a great chain,

Step Four: The angel seizes Satan,

Step Five: The angel binds Satan with the chain,

Step Six: The time period is established as 1,000 years,

Step Seven: The angel throws Satan into the Abyss,

Step Eight: The angel re-locks the Abyss, with Satan in side.

I think our conclusion should be that **‘Satan is now locked up for 1,000 years, which will Coincide with the Millennial reign of Jesus Christ on Earth’**, this would mean **‘Thrown out of Heaven (Expelled from heaven, to the earth, at the mid-point of the Seven Year Tribulation Period’, Rev. 12:7-12) and now Locked—Out of Earth in the Abyss’**. In the next part of this verse we will be told, → **‘Why God Locked Up Satan – for the Next 1,000 years’!**

Verse 3, Part 3: “...to keep him from deceiving the nations any more...” To me these words describe the **‘Primary Subject’** of the first three verses. I am not sure why God locked up Satan during this specific 1,000 year period, which just happens to the same 1,000 year period that Jesus will **‘Rule & Walk’** the earth with humanity. Unless, it is to show humanity that even with Jesus/Gods Son walking the earth with men and setting the example and without Satan to deceive and tempt men → **that man’s rebellious nature will always prove to be his down-fall’**. Remember what happened in the **‘Garden of Eden’, Adam & Eve walked with God and still → Rebelled against Gods ONE COMMAND, based on their own Freewill and this was before man’s first sin, which separated him from God;** Genesis Chapter 3. We have talked about man’s sin nature before and how strong it is & how weak man is against it (sin nature). And without the help of the Holy Spirit to help him resist → **‘Our Human Nature & Satanic Temptations’**, man is too weak to resist and will always fall into a **‘Depraved Spiritual State Forever’!**

Verse 3, Part 4: “...until the thousand years were ended...” As I said when we discussed Verse 2, Part 3, above; I believe that these words simple – ‘Establish the amount of time Satan will be Locked away in the Abyss’ Again → which will coincide with the ‘Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth.’

Verse 3, Part 5: “After that, → he must be set free for a short time.” Most scholars do not really have much to say about these words, however, to me I think they speak volumes about ‘Gods Entire Plan—Purpose for Man—His Creation’. I think ‘Simply Stated → It is the Choices that Each Person will Make → When Influenced or Not Influenced By Outside Forces –Based on Each persons Free-Will’! Who is man going to ‘Chose to Obey, Worship and Serve’ → ‘God—His Creator’ or → ‘Something Else’ (Satan, a Fallen Angelic/Being or even ‘Him Self—Man’?

Every Human who has ever been born, form the time of Adam and Eve until the last human is born on planet earth, will be granted by God something that we call ‘Freewill’. God has provided man with this ability so that → ‘He—man would be able to ‘Willingly; of his Own Freewill, Decide to Obey and Worship His Creator, because of What He—God had Done for Him—Man’ and the Millennial Period will be no different, except during this period, Satan will not be able to influence humans decision making process. Most scholars believe that billions of people will be born during this 1,000 year period, because the Bible indicates people will live much longer during this period. Many scholars believe that some people could live the entire 1,000 years and have many children.

However, during the ‘Millennial Period’ the ‘Governmental Structure’ will be much different than it has ever been on earth. Revelation 20:4b tells us that Jesus Christ will rule the earth during this 1,000 year period or what we call, ‘The Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ’, “They came to life and reigned with Christ a thousand years.” Also see Rev. 20: 6b. We are also told in Revelation 19: 15b, the type of ‘Governmental Structure’ that will exist during this 1,000 years period, “He will rule them with an iron scepter.”

To me this is saying that during the 1,000 year reign of Jesus Christ on earth, people will not be allowed to openly sin, without ‘Quick judgment by Jesus

Christ—Himself'. Also, remember during this 1,000 year period, Jesus Christ will be **ALL GOD**. He will physically walk the earth with '**Immortal & Mortal Humans**', however, He will know ever thing that is happening on earth, ever second of every day, for the entire 1,000 years and → He will also know ever thought in ever humans mind and soul, ever second of every day. Keep in mind that even though people will not be able to '**Physically act Upon Their Evil—Sinful Thoughts**' (without quick judgment by Jesus) → They will still have '**Freewill**', which will allow them to '**Openly Rebel Within Their Hearts**', even though Jesus Christ will not allow this '**Rebellion to be Manifested in Their Physical Actions**'.

NOTE: It appears to me that this '**Rebellious Group**' will come from the '**Children of the Saints who enter the Millennium Period**', because only saved people will enter the '**Millennial Period**', so it must be their children!

I do not know why, nor does God tell us why, → But it appears that the, '**Internally Harbored Evil—Sinful Thoughts of Rebellious People**', God will allow to surface at the end of the 1,000 years period → '**Their Reaction is Described**' in Rev. 20: 7-8, "**When the thousand years are over,** → **Satan will be released from prison and** → **will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog** → **to gather them for battle.** → **In number they are like the sands on the seashore.**"

Again, we are not told why God: **Set the time period at 1,000 years** → **Nor are we Told Why God** → **Allowed these Rebellious and Sinful thoughts to go unpunished for 1,000 years or Why God** → **Released Satan after 1,000 years.** However, it is my opinion → That one of the things that God requires of every man is → That '**He or She – Willingly Choses Him – God, Over Satan or Self**'. Again, this is known as '**Freewill**' and is a choice that every human has to make. No one who has ever lived has been allowed to '**Opt-Out of this Process**', because the outcome of this; '**Human → Freewill Choice will Determine where you Spend Eternity**' → **Eternity with God** or → **Eternity in the Lake of Burning Sulfur—Fire**'. **The choice is every humans to make!**

The last thing that I would like to point out is that it appears to me that Revelation Chapters 19, 20, 21 & 22 should be viewed as, God informing His/Gods creations (both—heaven & earth) with, **'The Final Part of Gods Plan for His/Gods First Creation & The Beginning of His/Gods Second Creation' and 'That ALL CREATED BEINGS Are Put On Notice → 'That God is 'The One & Only True God' '.** I think that is why God starts off these chapters with the 'Response from Heaven' in Rev. 19:1-3, **"After this I heard what sounded like the roar of a great multitude in heaven shouting: → 'Hallelujah! Salvation and glory and power belong to our God, → for true and just are His judgments. → He has condemned the great prostitute → who corrupted the earth by her adulteries. → He has avenged on her the blood of His servants.' → And again they shouted; 'Hallelujah! → The smoke of her goes up for ever and ever'."**

Summary of Revelations, 20:1-3:

- 1) God sends His messenger from heaven, → **"And I saw an angel coming down out of heaven..."**
- 2) God Empowers His Messenger with the POWER necessary to do his task, → **"...having the key to the Abyss and holding a great chain."**
- 3) He, Gods Messenger demonstrates that God has given him the Power to do the task he was sent to do by God, **"He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. He threw him into the Abyss and locked and sealed it over him..."**
- 4) God establishes the time period in which Satan will be un-able to 'deceive' the humans on earth, **"...for a thousand years."**
- 5) Gods Power is absolute: **He-God has always had the Power to Capture Satan, "He (Gods angel) threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him..."**
- 6) God also has the Power to Prevent Satan from **'Mentally or Spiritually'** deceiving/speaking to any human. **"...to keep him from deceiving the nations any more until the thousand years were ended."** I believe that this is a type foreshadowing of **'The Environment God Will Create After the Great White Throne Judgment'**. Again, I think this speaks directly to

the type of Void/Barrier that God will create between ‘The New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’ and the ‘Lake of Burning Sulfur’. Just my opinion.

- 7) God ends these three verses with a ‘Factual Statement’—Letting the reader know that this is not the ‘Last Time the First Creation will see Satan’,
“After that he (Satan) must be set free for a short time.”

Details on Second Topic—Verses 4-6:

Again, this is the Second Topic, within Revelation Chapter 20: which include, Verses 4-6, and ‘Describes the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ and who will be Ruling with Him on Earth during this 1,000 year period’.

(Verse 4) “I saw thrones → on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge. → And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded → because of their testimony for Jesus Christ and because of the word of God. → They had not worshiped the beast or his image and not received his mark on their forehead or their hand. → They came to life and reigned with Christ for thousand years. (Verse 5) → The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were ended. → This is the first resurrection. (Verse 6) → Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. → The second death has no power over them, but → they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for thousand years,”

To me the ‘Over-View’ of these 3 verses, ‘Begins the Process of Painting or Describing’ for the reader a ‘Mental Picture’ of five specific things →

- 1) The ‘Basic Governmental Structure of Jesus Christ; Millennial Government’,
- 2) A ‘Description of the People—Beings → who will Hold Governmental Positions within Jesus Christ Millennial Government’,
- 3) Why these Specific People—Beings → were picked to hold these Governmental Positions,
- 4) The ‘Time Period that these Specific People—Beings → will serve in these Governmental Position’,

5) And 'A Specific Blessing has been Granted to this group of People—Beings → They will never see the 'Second—Spiritual Death'.

Remember this is just my impression of an overview of these three verses. We will now begin our detailed study of these three verses.

Verse 4:

"I saw thrones → on which were seated → (First Group) those who had been given authority to judge. → (Second Group) And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded → because of their testimony for Jesus Christ and because of the word of God. → They had not worshiped the beast or his image and not received his mark on their forehead or their hand. → They came to life and reigned with Christ for thousand years.

Also, keep in mind when reading these verses, it appears that they, at times, are identifying or could be including more than one group of Gods Saints:

First Statement: "I saw thrones → on which were seated → (First Group) those who had been given authority to judge. → Greek Translator, "And I saw thrones, and they sat on them. And judgment was given to them." To me God leads out with this first statement to quickly establish the fact that "those" (saints) who are now being talked about have already been given "authority to judge". (We will discuss in the other verses who makes up 'all of' this 'Ruling Group'). The other point which I think God makes very clear is the type of 'Basic Governmental Structure of Jesus Christ Millennial Government'. Notice the word "thrones" which denotes a 'Kingdom'. Remember back in Revelation 19:16 Jesus name was identified as, "On His robe and on His thigh He has the name written, 'King of Kings and Lord of Lords'. Again, sounds a lot like a kingdom; also, there are many other verses in the Bible that speak about the 'Kingdom of God and the Kingdom of Jesus'. Ps. 47:7-8, 1 Sam. 12:12, Ps. 45:6, Ps. 145:11-13, Isa. 37:16, Luke 23:51, Isa. 32:1, Dan. 7:18, Dan. 7:14, Jer. 23:5-6, Matt. 10:7, Matt. 3:1-2, Matt. 16:28, these are just as few of this type of verses.

NOTE: Also, there are many scholars who believe that this group identified in Verse 4, sentence one, is in fact; the **'Raptured Church'**, given this same type of wording is used to describe then in 1 Cor. 6:3-4, **"Do you not know that we will judge angels."** Also see Luke 22:30

Now I will break verse (4) down into its basic components to make it easier to understand and reference any of our **'Macro-Points'** from above.

Verse 4 → First Sentence, Details:

ONE: **"I saw thrones..."** with these words I God is letting the reader know three specific things:

1) This is the beginning of a new section which: **'Describes the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ & Who will be Reigning with Him'**. Remember verse 1 started out, **"And I saw an angel..."** which introduced the subject in verses 1-3. The beginning of verse 4 starts out, **"I saw thrones..."** which introduces the next subject that will be covered in verses 4-6.

2) This statement should be taken **'Literally'** and **'Not Symbolically'**, these **"Thrones"** are **'Literal'** and so is the **'Kingdom'**

3) The Millennial Kingdom will be structured with a **'King at Top'**, which will be **Jesus Christ** and then **'His/Jesus Christ; Saints Filling in the remaining Governmental Positions'**.

TWO: **"...on which were seated..."** I think God made the meaning of these four words very simple → There are **'Actual Beings'** **"seated"** on these **'Actual'** **"Thrones"**. At this point we are not told: **'Who they are'** or **'What their Job will be'**, however, we do know that they will be part of the **'Ruling Class—During the Millennial Reign of Jesu Christ on Earth'**. More information on this **'group'** will come in the following part of this verses.

THREE: (First Group) **"...those who had been given authority to judge."** I think God in this third section of the **'First Sentence'** is specifically telling the reader that **'These People—Beings are already in heaven and already been**

seated on their thrones, “...throne on which were seated...” and had already been given authority to judge; “...those who had been given authority to judge.”. Base on the fact that all of this is past tense, I believe that this group is made up of the **‘Raptured Church’**. Based on all of the other data points within these 3 verses; this is the only place where the verse fits the description of the **‘Raptured Church’**. We can discuss in class.

Verse 4 → Second Sentence, Details:

Second Statement: And I saw → (Second Group) the souls of those who had been beheaded → because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. → They had not worshiped the beast or his image and not received his mark on their forehead or their hand. → They came to life and reigned with Christ for thousand years. Greek Translator, “...and the souls of the ones having been beheaded → because of the witness of Jesus, and because of the word of God, → and who had not worshiped the beast nor its image, → and had not received the mark on their forehead and on their hand.”

Over View: I do not think there can be any mistake that this **‘Second Group’** of people/being that are identified in this portion of the verse are the **‘Saints that were Martyred During the Seven Year Tribulation Period’**.

Second Sentence—Verse 4, Part One of One:

Again, God starts off this verse with the words, “And I saw...” meaning that God has again, made some kind of change in what He is talking about, which in our case would be the **‘Second Group of People—Beings’**.

It also appears to me that God is providing for the reader **‘Four Additional Characteristics or Attributes’** about this **‘Second Group’**, which are as follows:

Second Sentence—Verse 4, Part Two of One:

1) Defines the specific method in which these saints died, “...those who had been beheaded...” Keep in mind that we have seen this same group talked about in Revelation twice before;

First Time → In Rev. 6:9-11, focus on verse 11, **“When he opened the fifth seal. I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain because of the word of God and the testimony that they had maintained.”**

Second Time → In Rev. 7:9-17, focus on verse 14, **“I answered, ‘Sir, you know’. And he said, ‘These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made white in the blood of the Lamb’.”**

Second Sentence—Verse 4, Part Two:

2) Defines the specific reason; Why these saints were Martyred—beheaded, “...because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God.” Again, these words specifically describe the reason why the **‘Saints’** of part 1 above were **‘Martyred’**. **“...because of their testimony of Jesus Christ and because of the word of God.”** If you re-read the two Revelation quotes from # 1 above this will be made plain. I think the other way to look at these words is that they **‘Describe for the Reader’** → **‘How these Saints Lived their Lives while on Earth’**.

Second Sentence—Verse 4, Part Three:

3) Defines the specific method in which they ‘Resisted the False Prophet and antichrist, and again, Why they were martyred, “They had not worshiped the beast or his image and not received his mark on their forehead or their hand.” Remember this statement is repeated throughout the Book of Revelation and is one of the **‘Primary Requirements for God Saints Living During the Seven Year Tribulation Period’**. **“They had not worshipped the beast or his image and not received his on their forehead or their hand.”** I see this as the reciprocal of **‘Second Sentence—Verse 4, Part Two’** above. I think the other way to look at this sentence is → This is the **‘Primary Action that Gods Saints CAN-NOT DO under any Circumstance and be called A Child of God’**, during the seven year tribulation period. The meaning of this **‘Process of Receiving Satan’s Mark’** is described in some detail, in Rev. 13:11-18, and the **‘Spiritual Implementations’** are spelled out very clearly in Rev. 14:9-14. I also, believe that the **‘mark of the beast is done on the skin—forehead or hand’** but is also done on the **‘heart’** of the person. This will permanently **‘seal their heart’** so that they will believe the delusion—lie and

not the truth. **Note:** I also, believe that the 'mark of the beast is done on the skin—forehead or hand' but is also done on the 'heart' of the person. This will permanently 'seal their heart' so that they will believe the delusion—lie and not the truth.

Next Sentence: → Third Sentence—Verse 4, Part One:

4) To me, in the last part of this verse, God makes it clear, **'That the Group we have been talking about in 'Sentences Two & Three—the Tribulation Martyrs' are the ones being described in 'Sentence Four' and will be part of the 'Ruling Class' during the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth, "They came to life and reigned with Christ for thousand years."** Also, I believe that God words within this portion of the verse let the reader know, the following:

a) This group will go through some kind of 'Form Change' → "They came to life..." and I believe it will be what we would call → an 'Immortal Body', this transformation will be better defined in verse 5b & 6.

b) In the next point I believe God makes is much clearer → 'This Specific Group will' – "Reign with Christ for a thousand years", thereby defining their position, "reign" and the 'Time Period Involved is Defined as' "...with Christ for a thousand years", or what we have been calling 'The Millennial Reign—Kingdom of Jesus Christ on Physical Earth'. Also, to me there is no question that this part of the verse is referencing the 'Martyred Tribulation Saints'; Given the majority of verse 4 , starting with, "And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded..." is talking about the 'Martyred Tribulation Saints'. And our verse starts with the word "They" referencing this same group. Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own mind.

Additional Note:

This discussion will be like a mini-series on who will be included within the 'Millennial Ruling Class on Earth'. There has been much discussion among scholars as to exactly who will be included within this group of saints. There are

three specific groups that are identified in scripture that will take part in this **'Millennial Reign Process'**:

- 1) The Raptured Church Saints—both alive and dead, this group is defined in Rev. 20:4a
- 2) The Tribulation Saints—dead, this group is defined in Rev. 20:4b to the end of the verse.
- 3) The Old Testament Saints—Jews & Other? Not defined in the Book of Revelation—but defined in the Old Testament

Therefore, before we move to verse 5, I would like to make several comments about each of these groups, so that you will have complete understanding of exactly, Who will be involved in this **'Ruling Group During the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'**:

The Church Saints:

As I said in our introduction to verse 4, there are many scholars who believe that the group being specifically identified in Verse 4, sentence one is the **'Raptured Church'** and these word do not include any other group of saints. They believe that the other potential groups are identified in the remaining verses 4b-6. They also point to the similarity between the words within our verse and 1 Cor. 6:3-4, **"Do you not know that we will judge angels."** Also see Luke 22:30

The Tribulation Saints:

Given the specific wording within verses 4b-6, there does not appear to be any scholars that does not believe that these verse are speaking about the **'Tribulation Martyred Saints'**.

The Old Testament Saints:

There are many views by scholars as to; **'Will Any of the Old Testament Saints be Part of this Ruling Class During the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth'**? As close as I can determine; three of the primary interpretation/decision points that should allow us to make a reasonable decision – also notice it is just Israel/Jews that are being talked about in these verses.

1) How you interpret Revelation 20:5-6. The key verse in these verses is 5a, **“The rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were over.”** Two main concepts: **a)** Is this verse written to the ‘Saints of the Church/New Testament Period’ or **b)** Is this verse written to every ‘Saint’ that has ever lived? We will discuss this in some detail when we discuss verses 5-6. However, the question will remain the same! **(Hint)** It could not be written to the Old Testament Saints, as it was written in 93 AD and at that time they were all dead.

2) How you interpret Daniel 12:1-2. Quoted, verse 2, **At that time Michael the great prince who protects your people, will arise. → There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. → But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered. → Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: → some to everlasting life, → others to shame and everlasting contempt.”** Again, we will discuss this verse when we do our detail analysis of Rev. 20:5-6.

3) How you interpret Zechariah Chapters 12-14. These chapters in Zechariah are talking about the nation of Israel, during the ‘End Times period’. I will pull out some of the key verses: 12:10, **“And I will pour out on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and supplication. They will look on Me, the one they have pierced, and they will mourn for Him as one mourns for an only child, and grieves for a firstborn son.”** And 13:9b, **“They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, ‘They are My people’, and they will say, ‘The Lord is our God’.”** And 14:3-4a, **“Then the Lord will go out and fight against those nations, as He fights in the day of battle. On that day His feet will stand on Mount Olives, east of Jerusalem...”** Again, we will discuss these verses when we do our detail analysis of Rev. 20:5-6.

Just to open our vision a little; this verse in Daniel appears to be addressing **‘All Saints’, Daniel 7:17-18, “The four great beasts are four kingdoms that will arise from the earth. But the saints of the Most High will receive the kingdom and will possess it forever—yes, for ever and ever.”**

There are many other but I think these are three key interpretation/decision points that will allow us to reach a decision.

Daniel 7:17-18, **“The four great beast are four kingdoms that will arise from the earth. But the saints of the Most High will receive the kingdom and will possess it forever—yes, for ever and ever.”**

Verse 5:

“The rest of the dead did not come to life → until the thousand years were ended. → This is the first resurrection.”

Mini-Note: Before we begin, to me the key to understanding this statement is → who is included in the group? And there are two main concepts to be considered:

“The rest of the dead did not come to life → until the thousand years were ended.

One: Is this verse written specifically to the ‘Saints of the Church/New Testament Period’. Given this verse is in the Book of Revelation, which was ‘Specifically Written for the People of the Church Period & Seven Year Tribulation Period— (see Revelation Chapters 1-19)’. Therefore, I would have to believe that this verse is directed at the ‘Unsaved People Who Have Died During This Same Period’.

Two: Or is this verse written to every ‘Saint’ that has ever lived? As I said before; I do not think it would have been written to the Old Testament Saints, as the ‘Book of Revelation’ was written in 93 AD and at that time they (Old Testament Saints) were all dead, therefore, this would make no sense! And God does not try to trick anyone.

Mini-Note: **“This is the first resurrection.”** Most scholars do not really address this statement , but jump straight to verse 6, given Jesus Christ was the **‘First Resurrection’**.

Verse 5:

Now we will begin our detailed study of verse 5, **“The rest of the dead did not come to life → until the thousand years were ended. → This is the first**

resurrection.” To me God provides the reader with three specific pieces of information in verse 5, which is as follows:

Part One—Verse 5: **“The rest of the dead did not come to life → until the thousand years are over.”** To me God is making it clear that this group will not come back to **“life”** during the **‘Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth’**, which means that they will not come to life until the **‘Great White Throne Judgment’**.

The next question is; **‘Exactly who is it that is in this group’?** To me to correctly understand this question: **‘We need to determine → Exactly, which group is ‘WHERE’ this point in time’?** I will list where I believe each group is at this exact point in time:

First Group:

All, Church Saints—They just went through the **‘Wedding Supper to Jesus’** → Then returned with Jesus at His Second Coming to Earth → Now awaiting next step— which will be **‘Ruling with Jesus Christ during His Millennial Reign on Earth**. Also, all will be in **‘immortal bodies’** at this point in time → Next step will be the **‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’**.

Second Group:

All, Martyred Tribulation Saints—They just went through; **‘Some Portion of the Seven Year Tribulation Period’** (depending on when they were martyred) → Now awaiting next step— which will be **‘Ruling with Jesus Christ during His Millennial Reign on Earth**. Also, all will be in **‘immortal bodies’** at this point in time → Next step will be the **‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’**.

Third Group:

All, Israel/Jewish Saints, Who are Dead, when the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ Begins (I believe that this group will include everyone from Abraham to the last Hebrew that dies just prior to Jesus Second Coming) – They will have just been resurrected just prior to Jesus Christ, Second Coming, (see Dan. 12:1-2) **Now**

awaiting next step— which will be ‘Ruling with Jesus Christ during His Millennial Reign on Earth. Also, all will be in ‘immortal bodies’ at this point in time → Next step will be the ‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’.

Forth Group:

All, Pre-Abraham Saints and Any Other Person/Saint – Who are dead. They will have just gone through the ‘Wedding Supper of the Lamb/Jesus and His Bride/Church’, as **“invites”**, Rev. 19:9, **“The angel said to me, ‘Write; Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb’.”** It appears to me that this group will remain in heaven during ‘Jesus Millennial Reign on Earth’ and awaiting the ‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’.

Fifth Group:

All, Millennial Saints, Who are dead or alive, (when each of these people die will determine if they are on earth or in heaven). Next step → awaiting the ‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’.

Sixth Group:

All, Unsaved people who have ever lived, (this would include all unsaved people from the time of Adam until the last person has been created and died). Next step → awaiting the ‘Great White Throne Judgment—Then Eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’.

I think this list includes every human who has ever been conceived, however, we can discuss in class.

Part Two—Verse 5: **“This is the first resurrection.”** To me, in these 5 words, God is making it clear or plain to all readers, of all generation → both saved and un-saved, that the **‘Groups Being Talked About’** in verses 4-6 are included in: **“This is the first resurrection.”** (Note: Keep in mind that the **“first resurrection”** will not apply to everyone who has ever lived). I base this on many other scripture’s as

well as, the words within the beginning of this sentence, **“The rest of the dead → did not come to life until the thousand years were ended.”**

Also, if you go back and re-read our **(NOTE on page 1,024-1,027)** you will see that the **potential saints** that could be involved in the **“...first resurrection”** would be:

- 1) Church Saints
- 2) Tribulation Saints
- 3) Old testament Saints

And of course we would need to add to this list the **‘Very First Resurrection—Which Would Be Jesus Christ’**, 1 Cor. 15:20, **“But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruit of those who have fallen asleep.”**

Also, Col. 1:18, **“And He is the head of the body, the church; He is the beginning and the first born from among the dead, so that in everything He might have the supremacy.”**

Notes on First Resurrection:

I will provide specific information on the **Biblical Concept**, that Christians call the → **“Resurrection—Process”**. We will also talk about how specific scripture appears to describe; **‘The Order That This Process Will Take Place’**. I will provide specific scripture that speaks about this issue, and we **‘Look at the Chronological Order of → How it will Un-Fold’!**

First Data Point—about the FIRST RESURRECTION:

All the people who have ever lived will be → **‘Raised From the Dead’** at some point in time → this means both **‘Saved & Unsaved’**. Actually the Bible tells us that there will be **‘Two Resurrections’** but in this discussion we will only talk about the **‘Heavenly Being and the Saved People that will be Involved’** in the **‘First Resurrection’**.

Jesus, Himself, tells us that there will be a “Resurrections” of everyone who has ever lived; John 5:28-30, “Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when ALL who are in their graves → will hear His voice and come out → those who have done good will rise to live, and → those who have done evil will rise to be condemned. By Myself I can do nothing; I judge only as I hear, and My judgment is just, for I seek not to please Myself but Him who sent Me.” Also, Luke speaks about this same ‘Biblical Concept’ when he quotes Jesus’s words in Luke 14:13-14, “But when you give a banquet, invite the poor, and the crippled, the lame and the blind, and you will be blessed. Although they cannot repay you, → you will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous.”

Again, Luke, describes this same ‘Biblical Concept’ being used by Paul, when he presented his case before Governor—Felix, Luke Chapter 24, describes this entire incident; focus on verse 15, “However, I admit that I worship the God of our forefathers, as a follower of the Way, which they call a sect. I believe everything that agrees with the Law and that is written in the prophets, and I have the same hope in God as these men, → That there will be a resurrection of → BOTH → the righteous and → the wicked.”

Second Data Point—about the FIRST RESURRECTION:

The ‘First Resurrection’ will be composed of several steps, but will follow a ‘Specific Chronological Order—as Stated in the Bible’, and each step could include different ‘Beings & People Groups’:

STEP ONE: The ‘Resurrection of Jesus Christ’ will be the first step within this process, 1 Cor. 15:20, “But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruit.”

STEP TWO: The Second Group to be Resurrected at the → ‘First Resurrection’ will be the ‘The Saints from the Church Period’, (Pentecost to Rapture), who have died during this period, 1 Thess. 4:15, “According to the Lord’s own words, →

we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left to the coming of the Lord, → will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep.”

STEP THREE: The ‘Third Group to be Resurrected’ at the ‘First Resurrection’ will be the ‘Saints Who are Still Alive’ at the, ‘Rapture of the Church’, 1 Thess. 4:18, “...the dead in Christ will rise first. → After that we who are still alive and are left will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.”

Paul provides the reader with additional insight, in part, to the chronological order involved in the ‘Resurrection Process’, in 1 Cor. 15:20-26, “But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruits → of those who have fallen asleep. For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead also through a man. For as in Adam all died, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn: → Christ the first fruits; → then when he comes, those who belong to Him. → Then the end will come, when He hands over the kingdom to God the Father after He has destroyed all dominions, authorities and power. For He must reign until He has put all enemies under His feet. → The last enemy to be destroyed is death.”

Again, Paul provides the reader with some additional insight, in part, to the chronological order involved in the ‘Resurrection Process’, in 1 Thess. 4:13-18, “Brothers, we do not want you to be ignorant about those who have fallen asleep, or grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope. → We believe that Jesus died and rose again and → so we believe that God will bring with Jesus → those who have fallen asleep in Him. According to the Lord’s own words, → we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left to the coming of the Lord, → will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of and arch-angel and with the trumpet of God, and → the dead in Christ will rise first. → After that we who are still alive and are left will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.”

Third Data Point—about the FIRST RESURRECTION:

Daniel in the Old Testament talks about this same **'Resurrection Process'**, however, it appears to me that Daniel words are talking specifically about a time point at the very end of the **'Seven Year Tribulation Period'** and **'Specifically to the Nation of Israel and the Jewish People'**, Dan. 12:1 4, **"At that time Michael, the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered. Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. But you, Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. Many will go here and there to increase knowledge."**

NOTE on Daniel:

I am going to re-cap Daniel 12:1-4, adding my comments, hopefully this will help with our analysis: **"At that time Michael, the great prince who protects your people,** (Michael was the Arch-Angle that God assigned to protect the nation Israel) **will arise.** (Will again, move into a protection mode for the nation of Israel) **There will be time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then.** (This period is defined as the last 3 ½ years of the seven year tribulation period—remember the antichrist will break the treaty he signed with Israel at about the mid-point of the seven year tribulation period) **But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered.** (Remember, your name is written in the **'Book of Life'** when you are saved) **Multitudes who** (Based on the remaining words in these verses, I believe that this word **"Multitude"** means **'All Jewish People who have ever lived'**) **sleep in the dust of the earth will awake:** (Meaning, they will be **'Resurrected'** like the **'Church Saints who have Died in Christ'**) **some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt.** (This is

where it appears to me that words are a little confusing → 'Actually the Saved Jews in this Group' will be raised, in immortal bodies to rule with 'Jesus During His Millennial Reign on Earth', and then to live with 'God/Jesus throughout Eternity n the New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'. It appears to me that this 'Second Group—Unsavaed Jews', will either be 'raised from the dead—physical death' and held in some place of torment, or there is actually a timing issue, that we have not been told about and this second group is not actually raised from the dead, until the 'Great white Throne Judgment'. Remember, the **'Resurrection'** of the unsavaed, during the church period will not happen until much later—the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**, which is actually call the **'Second Resurrection'**—again confusing—we can talk more about this in class. Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. (Again, these words appear to indicate that the **'Saved Jews included in this First Resurrection and are of God and Followed His Commands'**) But you, Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. (In these words it appears to me that God is telling Daniel to "...close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end." Meaning we make not be able to understand the meaning of this scripture, until it is very close to being fulfilled or is actually taking place) Many will go here and there to increase knowledge. (I am not sure why God out these words at this point in time, as they appear to be more of a 'Prophetic Sign' about – what will be happening during the—**'Period Leading Up to the 'End Times Period—Like Today'**).

Based on this it appears to me that the **'Resurrection'** being spoken of in Daniel 12:1-4 and also in Zechariah Chapters 12-14 will take place at the **'Very End of the Seven Year Tribulation Period'**.

This event could also have something to do with **'144.000 Jewish Men'**, being talked about in Revelation Chapter 14, verses 1-5, focus on verse 3b, **"No one could learn the song except the → 144,000 WHO HAD BEEN REDEEMED FROM THR EARTH."**

Also, keep in mind that this event appears coincide with the words in Zechariah Chapters 12-14, focus on Zech. 13:8-9, **“In the whole land, declares the Lord, ‘two-thirds will be struck down and perish; yet one third will be left in it. This third I will bring into the fire; I will refine them like silver and test them like gold. They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, ‘They are My people, and they will say, ‘The Lord is our God’.”**

Again, we are not told in these verses when this event will happen, however, based on Zech. 14:3 (which is part of the same through process of Zechariah Chapters 12-14), **“Then the Lord will go out and fight against those nations, as He fights in the day of battle. On that day His feet will stand on Mount of Olives...”** I think we can conclude based on this scripture that it will be → **‘At the very End the ‘Second Half of the Seven Year Tribulation Period’**. Actually at the **‘Second Coming of Jesus Christ to Earth’**.

NOTE:

I think we can say for sure that when the **‘Saved Jews’** are raised from the dead, will it be to a **‘Glorified Body’** to reign with Jesus throughout the **Millennium**. Also, it appears to me that the **‘Unsaved Jews’** will not be raised at this point (timing issue), but will be raised at the **‘Second Resurrection’** → **‘Great White Throne Judgment’** and then go directly to the **‘Lake of Burning Sulfur’**?

Forth Data Point—about the FIRST RESURRECTION:

John in Rev. 20:6 makes it clear that there will be at least **‘Two Resurrections’**, **“Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection.**
→ **The second death has no power over them, → but they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for a thousand years.”**

I think this verse has to be taken as a **‘Double Edged Sword’**, meaning **“Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection...”** Remember, we have already identified above, the three components within this group:

1) **‘The Church of Jesus Christ—All,**

2) 'Martyred Tribulation Saints',

3) 'The Jewish Saints from Israel'.

I base this on the entire context in verses 4-6, specifically the ending words within this verse, **"...will reign with Him for a thousand years."** As well as, God defining the **'Job or Position'** that these three groups of resurrected saints will have, **"...but they will be priest of God and Jesus and will reign with Him (Jesus)..."**

The other side of this → **'Sword; Would Be Very Negative'** and would include, **'All of the UNSAVED PEOPLE – Up to this Point in Time'**, therefore, obviously would **'Not Take Part in the → 'First Resurrection'**. Also, I think our verse and Rev. 20:6 clearly indicates that the **"Second Death"** (which will be rendered at the **Great White Throne Judgment**) will have **"Power Over Them"** and that they will not **"...be priest of God and Christ"** and will not, **"...reign with Him (Jesus) for a thousand years."**

Note: keep in mind the **'First Resurrection'** has multiple steps.

Fifth Data Point—about the FIRST RESURRECTION

Also, John makes it very clear, in Rev. 20:15, **"If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown in to the lake of fire."** Meaning that if you are **'Un-Saved'** → you will spend **'Eternity'** → **'Separated from God and all of His Love and Goodness for Eternity'** → which is actually the **worst Part of the → 'Second Death'**. Also John provides the reader with additional details as to how this **'Evaluation Takes Place'** and is described in Rev. 12-14, **"And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. → The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. → The lake of fire is the second death."**

Based on all of the above scripture I think we can make the following statements,

First Conclusion Statement:

Based on our **'First Data Point'**, John 5:28-30, we can say for sure that → **'Everyone who has ever lived (conceived) will be 'Resurrected' at some point in time' "...for a time is coming when ALL who are in the graves, will hear His (Jesus) voice and come out..."**

Second Conclusion Statement:

Also, based on our **'First Data Point'**, Luke 24:15, that there will be **'Two Resurrection (multiple points in time)'** → (more than one) for the **'Saved'** and one for the **'Unsaved'**, **That there will be a resurrection of → BOTH → the righteous and → the wicked."** Also, in our **'Forth Data Point'**, Rev. 20:6, **'Two Resurrections'** are indicated, **"Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection..."**

Third Conclusion Statement:

Based on many of our data points, if you are **'A Child of God—(what we have been calling a Saint)'**, you will be raised to **'Eternal Life with God—Ending Up in His New Heaven, Earth, and Jerusalem'**, **'First Data Point'**, John 5:28-30, **"...those who have done good will rise to live..."**, **'Third Data Point'**, Dan. 12:1-4, **"...some to everlasting life..."** and the **'Forth Data Point'**, Rev. 20:6, **"Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priest of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years."**

Forth Conclusion Statement:

Based on many of our data points above, if you are **'Un-saved'**, you will be → **'Separated From God and All of His Love & Goodness—for All of Eternity'**, **'First Data Point'**, John 5:28-30, **"...and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned..."** **'Third Data Point'**, Dan. 12:1-4; **"Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earthy, will awake; some to everlasting life, other**

to everlasting shame and contempt.” **‘Fifth Data Point’**, Rev. 20:15;
**“If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was
thrown into the lake of fire.”** Also, Rev. 20:12-14, **“The dead were
judged according to what they had done as recorded in the
books...The Lake of Fire is the Second Death”**

Fifth Conclusion Statement:

Based on our **‘Data Points’** above I will put together my view of → **‘The Individual Chronological Order of the First Resurrection’**. I base my belief that the Bible indicates that this will be a multiple step process → **‘The Resurrection Process’** on the words in 1 Cor. 15:23, **“But each in his own turn, Christ, the first fruits; them when He comes those who belong to Him. Then the end will come...”** as follows:

First Event to Occur in the → First Resurrection Process—Saved:

Again, the **‘First Event to Occur’** in the **‘First Resurrection Process’** is the **‘Resurrection of Jesus Christ, by God the Father’**, **‘Second Data Point’**, and 1 Cor. 15:20-26, **“But Christ has indeed been raised from the death, as the first fruits...But each to his own turn, Christ the First fruits.”** Also, (not in data points) Acts 2:30-31, **“But God raised Him from the dead, and for many days He was seen by those who had traveled with Him from galilee to Jerusalem.”** These verses also establishes the **‘Time Frame’** of **‘The Resurrection of Jesus—The First Fruits’**.

Second Event to Occur in the → First Resurrection Process:

The **‘Second Event to Occur’** in the **‘First Resurrection Process’** is the **‘Rapture of the Church Saints’**, which will be a **‘Two Step Process’**, as follows:

1) The dead in Christ (People of Christ Church—who are dead) will be raised first and meet Christ in the clouds; **‘Second Data Point’**, 1 Thess. 4:14-16, **“We believe**

that Jesus died and rose again, so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep with Him. According to the Lords own words, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left till the coming of the Lord, will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the arch-angel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first.”

2) The **‘Church People’** still remaining alive at the **‘Rapture’** will be transformed and will meet Christ in the clouds, **‘Second Data Point’** 1 Thess. 4:16b-17, **“...and the dead in Christ will rise first. AFTER that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.”**

Note: Also see 1 Cor. 15:50-54 for scripture talking about the **‘Rapture of the Church’**, not in our data points.

‘Third Event to Occur in the → First Resurrection Process’:

Based on the words in Daniel 12:1-4, and Zechariah Chapters 12-14, Revelation Chapter 19 & 20 and many others, it would appear that there will be **‘Three Specific Events’** to occur to the **‘Nation of Israel—Jewish People at Jerusalem’**, during the **‘End Times Period’**, of which **‘The Resurrection of the Saved Jewish People’** will be one. I will list them below in the order I think they will happen, this is only my best guess.

One: They (Israel) will be under attack by the ‘antichrist and his armies’, Zech. 12:2-3, **“I am going to make Jerusalem a cup that sends all the surrounding people reeling. Judah will be besieged, as well as, Jerusalem. On that day, when all the nations of the earth are gathered against her...”** And then Jesus will return with His heavenly armies, Rev. 19:19-21, **“Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the white horse and His armies. But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. With these**

signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshiped his image. The two of them were throne alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. The rest of them were killed with the sword that came out of the mouth rider on the horse, and all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh.”

Based on my reading of scripture it appears that either, just before the attack or during the attack → **‘The One Third that is left (Israel—Jews)’** will **‘Repent and be Saved’**,

1) Zech. 13:8, “In the whole land, declares the Lord, ‘two-thirds will be struck down and perish; yet one third will be left in it.’”

2) Zech. 13:9, “This third I will bring into the fire; I will refine them like silver and test them like gold. They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, ‘They are My people’, and they will say, ‘The Lord is our God’.”

3) In Zechariah 13: verse 10, God is very specific about who the Jewish nation is talking about, “And I will pour out on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and supplication. They will look on ME, (Jesus) the one they have pierced, and they will mourn for Him as one mourns for and only child...”

Two: The Book of Daniel appears to be recording this same event, but from only the **‘Resurrection Point of View’**, Dan. 12:1-4, (verse 1) “At that time Michael the great prince who protects your people, will arise. → There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. (Last 3 ½ years of the Tribulations) → But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered. (1/3 from # 2 above) → (verse 2) Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake; some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. (This appears to be saying that every Jew who has ever lived will be resurrected (saved & unsaved) at this point in time, Abraham to the moment in time John is talking about: (verse 3) Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. (Jewish people who are saved) →

(verse 4) **But you Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end.** → **Many will go here and there to increase knowledge.**

Again, there are two primary schools of thought, as to when the event described in Dan. 12:1-4 will occur, I will list them below:

First View:

The people who support this view believe that → **'All of the Old Testament Saints (Jew & Non-Jew)'** will be **'Resurrected at the Time the Church is Raptured'**. They use verses like: John 5:28-29, **"Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when ALL who are in the grave will hear His voice and come out—those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned."** To me this verse appears to be talking about everyone who has ever lived and **'Not just the Jewish Nation'**. It also appears to be saying that → At some point in time; everyone who has ever lived will be resurrected, which is true. However, this verse does not specifically state that **'All of this will happen at the same point in time'**. Remember, most scholars do not believe that unsaved people will not hear or see Jesus at the **'Rapture of the Church'**, 1 Thess. 4:13-11. It appears that they are basing their opinion on the fact that Paul is speaking directly to the saints in Thessalonica, about specific issues that they were having trouble understanding or had been confused by **'false teachers'**.

Also, Dan. 12:2, **"Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake; some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt."** To me these verses appear only be talking about the **'Jewish Nation—Israel'**.

Second View:

The people who support this view believe that, **'All Old Testament Saints'** will be **'Resurrected at Two Separate Points in Time'**,

'First Point in Time':

They believe that the **'First Point in Time'** was when Christ died on the cross, and use Matt. 27:50-53 to support their view, **"And when Jesus had cried out in a loud voice, He gave up the spirit. At that moment the curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth shook and the rocks split. The tombs broke open and the bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life. They came out of the tombs and after Jesus' resurrection they went into the holy city and appeared to many people."** However, it appears to me that these verses are specifically talking about **"holy people"** who were returned to **'Physical Life'** and **'NOT, A Resurrected Immortal Body'**, which was caused by the **'Shear Spiritual—Physical Power'** that was released when Jesus died. Also, in this event I think God is just making a point, **'Power & Authority'** for people of this time period and all future readers about the **'POWER of this EVENT'**. Therefore, I do not think their verses support their view, just my opinion!

'Second Point in Time':

They believe that the **'Second Point in Time'** will be at the **'Resurrection of the → Martyred Tribulation Saints'** and use Rev. 20:4d to support their view, **"They came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years."** & Rev. 20:6b, **"...but they will be priest of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years."** Again, as I have said before, above it is my opinion that these verses do not in any way indicate that they are talking about the **'Old Testament Saints'**: Given, Rev. 20:4 b-c, specifically states that these verses are talking about the **'Martyred Tribulation Saints'**, **"And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshipped the beast or his image and had not received his mark on their forehead or their hand."** Again, Rev. 20:4b-c appears to be very specific, as to, who is being **'Resurrected'** at this point in time! Again, just my opinion

'Fourth Event to Occur in the → First Resurrection Process':

The **'Fourth Event to Occur'** in the **'First Resurrection Process'** will be the resurrection of the **'Martyred Saints of the Tribulation Period'**, which to best of my knowledge is only **'specifically talked about'** in the **'Book of Revelation'**. All of my scriptural quotes will be from Revelation Chapter 20, verses 4-6, (our current verses of study) because they are were not any in our above, **'Data Points'**. I think the scripture is clear that this event will happen at the very end of the **'Seven Year Tribulation Period or even at the beginning of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'**. Rev. 20:4b, **"And I saw the souls of those → who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God. They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark on their forehead or their hand. They came to life and reigned with Christ a thousand years."** Rev. 20:5b, **"This is the first resurrection."** Also see Rev. 6:9-11 and Rev. 7:9-17 for more information about this group.

NOTE: Before we move on, I would like to make it clear that the 'Third & Forth Event' could be reversed, as the actual order is not provide within scripture.

Additional Information and Questions on this Issue:

I have put together some additional scripture that will **'Support the Timing & Flow of This Process, as described Through—Out Scripture' & 'Open Questions'**.

Additional Data Point One:

Some scholars believe that the **'Old Testament Saints'** (defined as the Jewish nation) will not **be 'Transformed in to Immortal—Resurrected Bodies at Their Death. However, → This Event (Immortal Bodies) Will Happen at some Future Date.** I think based on, Dan. 12:1-2 above this is a true statement.

However, the unanswered question is: If the **'Old Testament Saints—All'** are not transformed into, **'What we are Calling—Immortal Heavenly Bodies—or Resurrected Bodies'**, then, **'What Form are They in—When They Die and Go to Heaven'?** This time period would be from the moment they die → until the **'Creation of the New Jerusalem, Heaven and Earth'**. The first part of our

comments was about the 'Jewish nation, whereas, the question portion was about 'All Old Testament Saints'. Therefore, to answer the question we will need to break this larger group down into two groups: 1) Adam to Abraham & 2) Abraham to Jesus.

Group One: Adam to Abraham:

I think Gen. 5:24 is the first place within scripture where this process is talked about. **"Enoch walked with God, and then he was no more, because God took him away."** I cannot find any evidence in scripture that speaks about this group of saints being transformed in to an 'Immortal Body'. (See note below) However, we do know that they will be in the **'Heavenly Portion of Sheol'** (Old Testament – Hebrew word for Paradise [New Testament word – Hades] for those who have died in God). I think this entire concept is spelled out very well in Luke 16:19-31, which tells the story of **'The Rich Man & and Lazarus and Abraham'**. Focus on verse 26, (Abraham speaking) **"and besides all this, between us and you a great chasm (Hades/Sheol) has been fixed, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us."** Based on this conversation, I do not think there can be any question, that both Abraham and Lazarus and the **(rich man are in one place/area?)** but separated by an unpassable, **"chasm"**. Scripture also tells us the same thing in, 2 Cor. 5:8, (Greek Translator), **"...we are fully assured, then, and are pleased rather to go away from home out of the body, (physical body) and to come home to the Lord."** I also like the KJV, **"We are confident, I Say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, (again, physical body) and to be present with the Lord."** Therefore, I do not there can be any question, that all saved people who have died will be instantly be with the Lord. However, I cannot find any scripture that supports the concept that **'Pre-Abraham Saints'**, once they die will be transformed into **'Immortal Bodies'**. It is my opinion that what part this specific group of Saints will play in God's Plan; which is described in Re. 19: 9, **"Then the angel said to me, 'Write; Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb!'"** As I have said before, I believe that these saints are part of the **"invitees"** at the **'Wedding Supper of the Lamb and Church'**.

See Notes Above: I have said this before, but I think we always need to keep in mind that God is a God of **'Extreme Order and Precision'**, (look at creation). And if you read all of scripture you will find that the saints that will receive an **'Immortal Body'** will all be part of the **'Ruling Class—During the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth'**. Also, remember, this group will be composed of three separate groups: The Raptured Church Saints & The Tribulation Saints & The Raptured Jewish Saints. **Note**; this group does not include the **'Pre-Jewish Saints'**. It is my opinion that God provides—gives this group of saints an **'Immortal Body'** to perform the **'Task'** that they have been given during this 1,000 year period, which is **'Assisting Jesus Rule the Earth & Heaven'** during this 1,000 year period. Therefore, there form will be what is required to move from place to place—across all of creation; in a split second—one example. However, it is my opinion that these **'Immortal Bodies'** will be replaced in the **'New Creation of Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'** because they will still be **'Tainted with the Sin of the Old Creation'** and **'Nothing that is Sin Tainted will be Allowed into the new Creation'**. I know this was a little wordy but I think key concepts are important.

Additional Data Point Two:

Now I will jump forward to the **'Transfiguration of Jesus'**, Matt. 17:1-4, **"After six days Jesus took with Him Peter, James and John the brother of James, and led them up a high mountain by themselves. There He transfigured before them. → His face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. → Just then there appeared before them Moses and Elijah, talking with Jesus. Peter said to Jesus, 'Lord, it is good for us to be here. It you wish, I will put up three shelters—one for you, one for Moses and one for Elijah.'"**

The standard definition for the words **'transfiguration'** is as follows:

- 1) a marked change in form or appearance; a metamorphosis,
- 2) a change that glorifies or exalts,
- 3) a sudden burst of radiance from the person,

Which is exactly, 'What happened to Jesus' as recorded in Matt. 17:1-4? However, my real point (question) to this issue is: 'What form were Moses and Elijah' in at this event? It appears to me that they 'Moses & Elijah' had a visible form that could also → Move through space with great speed and appear and disappear at will! To me these characteristics, define what → 'An Immortal—Resurrected Heavenly Body' would look or be like! Just my opinion!

Additional Data Point Three:

Now I will again jump forward to the 'Resurrection of Jesus Christ', 1 Cor. 15:20, "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep." I think to really understand exactly 'What Form, Jesus was actually in, in His Resurrected Body', we need to look at some scripture that provides us with 'Word we can Understand and → To Get Some Type of Mental Picture about His FORM'. Some which we just talked about in our previous data point.

Scripture Defining Jesus Resurrected Body:

Luke 24:30-31, "When He (Jesus) was at the table with them, He took bread, (could physically hold physical items) gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them (same as above). Then their eyes were opened and they recognized Him, and He disappeared from their sight (ability to appear and disappear at will)."

Luke 24:36-43, "While they were still talking about this, Jesus Himself stood among them (again Jesus could appear and disappear at will, but He could also pass through solid walls—matter) and said to them, 'Peace be with you'. They were startled and frightened, thinking they saw ghost. He said to them, 'Why are you troubled, and why do doubts arise in your minds? Look at My hands and My feet (Jesus has physical form). It is I Myself! Touch Me and see; (again physical form) a ghost does not have flesh and bone, (appears to have some type of physical body— "flesh and bone") as you see I have." When He had said this, He showed them His hands and feet. (Again, visible and physical form) And

while they still did not believe it because of joy and amazement, He asked them, 'Do you have anything here to eat?' They gave Him a piece of broiled fish, and He took it and ate it in their presence (I think this is Jesus telling us that He had a physical—fleshly body that could digest physical food).”

Mark, 16:19. “After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, He was taken up into heaven and He sat at the right hand of God” I think this verse speaks to two attributed:

- 1) 'Jesus's new Resurrected Body--Form' can move → throughout all of Creation at will, even though it has a physical form,
- 2) 'Jesus's new Resurrected Body', has been cleansed of sin and can enter heaven and God the Father's presence). However, based on the words in Revelation Chapters 21-22, it appears that **'All of the Old Creation is Tainted with Sin, both heaven and earth'** in one way or the other. Just my opinion.

Conclusion: Defining—A Resurrected Body:

- 1) Could physically hold physical items, clothing, food, liquid,
- 2) Ability to appear and disappear at will,
- 3) Could pass through solid wall—matter,
- 4) Jesus had a Physical form,
- 5) Jesus had a physical—fleshly body that could digest physical food,
- 6) Move throughout all of Creation at will,
- 7) Jesus Resurrected Body was cleansed of Sin and can enter heaven and the presence of God the Father

I am confident this is not a complete list but it gives us the basic idea of → Just How Great a 'Resurrected Body' will actually be—when will all get one.

Additional Data Point Four:

I believe the next step (step two) in the **'First Resurrection Process'**, after the **'Resurrection of Jesus Christ'**, will be what the scripture calls **'The Rapture of the Church'**. And again this event will take place in **'Two Steps'**,

Step One: The **'Resurrection of the Dead in Christ'**,

Step Two: The **'Resurrection of the Saints still Alive, at the time of the Rapture'**,

The **'Event Itself'** and the **'Sequential Order of this Event'**, are clearly stated in the scripture, as follows:

1 Thess. 4:14-17, **"We believe that Jesus died and rose again → and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in Him. → According to the Lords own words, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left to the coming of the Lord, will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep. → For the Lord Himself come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of an arch-angel, and the trumpet call of God → and the dead in Christ will rise first. (First Event) → After that we who are still alive and are left will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. (Second Event) → And so we will be with the Lord forever."**

1 Cor. 15:20-25, **Description of the Entire Event → "But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, → the first fruits of those who have fallen asleep. → For since the dead came through man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. → But each in his own turn: → Christ, the first-fruits; → then, when He comes, those who belong to Him. (I believe this is talking about, 'The Second Coming of Jesus Christ—at the Battle of Armageddon') → Then the end will come, (This is the end of the Seven Year Tribulation Period) → when He hands over the kingdom to God the Father after He has destroyed all dominions and authorities and power (This is talking about the New Jerusalem, New Earth and New Heaven)."**

1 Cor. 15:51-52. “Listen, I tell you a mystery: (remember the word “mystery” in scripture normally means: something not previously known—which would be the Rapture of the Church) → We will not all sleep, (Second Event) → but will all be changed – in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. (This is describing the entire event—First and Second) → For the trumpet will sound, → the dead will be raised imperishable, (First Event) → and we will be changed. (Second Event) → For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality (Specific Details about the Entire Event—First and Second).”

Additional Data Point Five:

Based on the words in Daniel 12:1-2, it would appear that ‘The Resurrection of the Jewish People’ will be next.

Again, the Book of Daniel appears to be talking about the ‘Resurrection of the Jewish Nation’, Dan. 12:1-4, “At that time Michael the great prince who protects your people, will arise. → There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. (Last 3 ½ years of the Tribulations) → But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered. (1/3 from # 2 above) → Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake; some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. (This appears to be saying that every Jew who has ever lived will be resurrected at this point in time, Abraham to the moment in time John is talking about: Note, there are two views on this issue: discussed below) → Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. (Jewish people who are saved) → But you Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. → Many will go here and there to increase knowledge.”

Additional Data Point Six:

To me the next step in the **'First Resurrection Process'** will be the resurrection of the **'Martyred Tribulation Saints'**. To me all of, Rev. 20:4b-6 is speaking about the **'Martyred Tribulation Saints'** and does not mention in any way the **'Old Testament Saints'**. I do not want to belabor this point, however, if you go back and re-read verses 4-6 I think you will see a **'Consistent Description Process'**, which I have defined as follows, however, this is just my opinion.

Revelation 20:4-6, Re-Cap: ANALYSIS:

Verse, 4a, "I saw thrones which were seated those who had been given authority to judge." Most scholars believe this is the **'Raptured Church'**; I provided detail scripture when we discussed this verse above. I just re-quoted this part of verse 4 for consistency and flow.

Verse 4b, "And I saw → the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God" To me the first three words in this sentence **"And I saw..."** indicates that this is the next thing John observes in his vision. Then John goes on to provide details & a description, as to what he was seeing, **"...the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God."** This group is further defined in Rev. 20:4c and in Rev. 4d, we are told what their **'Jobs'** will be, during the **Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth.**

Again, I think if you scan the book of Revelation, you will find this is how John **'Changes Subjects or Topics'**: Example → Revelation Chapter 19, verse 1, **"After this..."** verse 6, **"Then I heard..."**, verse 9, **"Then the angel said..."**, verse 11, **"I saw heaven standing open..."**, verse 17, **"And I saw an angel standing in the sun..."** verses 19, **"Then I saw the beast..."** Again, based on the fact that verses 4a started with the words, **"I saw..."** and verse 4b, also started with the words, **"And I saw..."** indicates to me that verse 4b is the beginning of a new **'Subject or Topic'** and in our case it is the **'Martyred—Tribulation Saints'** → **"...the souls of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony for Jesus and because of the word of God."** Again just my opinion.

Verse 4c, “They had not worshiped the beast or his image and had not received his mark on their forehead or their hand.” Again, this sentence opens with the word, “They...” which is referring the reader back to the subject of the previous sentence, ‘The Martyred Tribulation Saints’. Then rest of the sentence provides the reader with ‘Specific Details about What’ these ‘Martyred Tribulation Saints’, had ‘Not Done’ while ‘They’ were on this earth → “... had not worshiped the beast or his image and not received his mark on their forehead or the hand.” For more information on this issue, read Revelation Chapter 13, verses 11-18, also read Rev. 14:9-13.

Verse 4d, “They came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.” Again, this sentence does the same thing; it begins with the words “They...” and again is referencing the ‘Martyred Tribulation Saints’. And, again provides the reader with specific details about the ‘Martyred Tribulation Saints’, “...came to life (again, I think this is speaking about what we are calling an Immortal Resurrected Body) → and reigned with Christ for a thousand years (establishes the time period of the Millennial Kingdom on, the old earth).”

Additional Data Point Seven:

‘Will Everyone Who Either—Enters the Millennial Kingdom (as a saved person) or is ‘Born During This 1,000 Years and is Saved’ → ‘Live for this Entire 1,000 Year Period:’ or will ‘Some Die’ and if so, ‘When Will They be Resurrected?’ I think to answer this question it has to be split into three separate sub-sets, which are:

First Question → Data Point Seven: Will the saved people (entering or born and saved during this period) living during the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ live the entire 1,000 years or will some of them die during this period?

Two Schools of thought:

1) All **‘Saved People (entering or born)’** living during the **Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ** will not die—they will live the entire period. They use scripture like Isa. 65:20d, to support their view, “...he who fails to reach a hundred will be

considered to be accursed, (meaning unsaved)... I think this view is more likely, however, scripture is not clear on this issue.

2) Some of the **'Saved People'** living during the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ'** will die. They use verses like Isa. 65:20b, **"...or an old man who does not live out his years..."** The obvious implication would be that **'a man will have a finite number of years to live—even during the Millennium'**.

Second Question → Data Point Seven: Will the un—saved people living during the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ, live the entire 1,000 years or will some of them die during this period?

Most scholars believe that **'Un—Saved People'** living during the **Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ → Will Not Live the Entire Period.** They use verses like Isa. 65:20c-d to support their view, **"...he who dies at a hundred will thought a mere youth; he who fails to reach a hundred will be considered accursed."**

Note: I am not sure if these two questions can actually be answered, based on the scripture that God has provided us within the Bible. Many scholars have pointed to specific scripture to support their views, just like above, but, to me **'There is No Scripture'** that → **'Specifically States How Long these Saints will Live'** or **'How Long Un-Saved People'** will be allowed to live → **During the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ!**

Question Three: And if one or both of these groups of people (saved—unsaved) die during this 1,000 years period, will they → **'Be Resurrected at the Same Point in Time — or at Separate Points in Times?'**

My Conclusion:

Based on all of the scripture quoted above and the various views listed by scholars above: To me the answer is simple, we just cannot be sure. I cannot find the specific answer to this questions about either of these groups in the Bible. However, I will give you what I believe to be the answer based on our discussion above. And it will have two parts:

Part One → (IF) → Saved People were to Die During the One Thousand Year Reign of Jesus Christ: I believe that they will be **'Instantly Transformed into a— New Heavenly Form, which could be 'SIMILAR' to an — Immortal Resurrected Body'**, but will remain in the **'First Heaven with God the Father'** until the thousand years are over. I base this on we are not told of any additional **'Groups—Saints'** being present (resurrected) during the 1,000 years reign of Jesus Christ on the **'Original Earth'**. Also, the **(IF)** that I just stated in this section with is a **'BIG—IF'** and cannot be taken as a statement of fact.

Part Two → Un-saved People who Die During the One Thousand Years Reign of Jesus Christ: First, I believe that some unsaved people living on the earth during **Jesus Millennial Reign** will die—be put to death by Jesus for their **'Physical Sinful Actions'**. I also believe that they will be kept in some type of holding place, like the → **Abyss or the Lower Parts of Hades** or possibly some other place that is not mentioned in scripture, but away from God and all of His Goodness, for the remainder of the one thousand years. They will stay in this place with all of the other un-saved people who have every lived until the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**, which will occur at the end of the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'**.

Verse 6:

"Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. → The second death has no power over them, but, → they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for thousand years." To me this verse appears to have four distinct elements, as follows:

Verse 6: Part One: "Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. To me this appears to be just a statement of fact made by God and also provides the reader with some of the **'Attributes—Qualities'** of the groups (**Raptured Church—Martyred Tribulation Saints—Resurrected Jewish Saints**) that took part in **"The First Resurrection"** and the two **'Attributes—Qualities'** are defined as, **"Blessed and holy..."** However, these same **'Attributes & Qualities'** would refer to all saved people.

Verse 6: Part Two: The second death has no power over them, but, Again, to me this is nothing more than a statement of fact, being made by God. However, I believe that the internal workings of this statement goes much deeper, because only those who are protected by the **Shed Blood of Jesus** will be protected from the **'Second Death'**, and would include **'All Saved People'**, including the **All of the Old Testament Saints**, as well as, **'The Saints from the Millennial'**.

However, there are some scholars who believe that this **'Statement of Fact'**, because of the specific time it was written, was directed specifically at the **'Church and Tribulation Saints—Only'**. Therefore, All of the other saints (All Old Testament & Millennial Saints) will not receive this **'Blessing'** until the time of the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**! I cannot agree with this view; and on many levels.

Verse 6: Part Three: they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for thousand years, To me this verse needs to be split into two parts, as follows:

One: "...they will be priest of God and of Christ and..." To me this part of verse 6 provide the reader with the **'Basic Job Description of the Ruling Class of Saints'** during the Millennial Reign of Jesus on earth. Also, the saints being referred to in this portion of verse 6 is referenced in verse 4 of this chapter; (Raptured Church Saints – Martyred Tribulation Saints – Resurrected Jewish Saints). Also, keep in mind when thinking about this group, they will be the only saints that will receive an **'Immortal, Glorified Body'**. Again, because their job description is the only one that requires an **'Immortal Glorified Body'**.

Two: "...will reign with Him for thousand years," Again, to me the meaning of these words is simple, **'It Defines the Time Period that These Saints (Raptured Church Saints – Martyred Tribulation Saints – Resurrected Jewish Saints) will Rule with Jesus on earth'**.

Verse 6: "Blessed and holy are → those who have part in the first resurrection. → The second death has no power over them, → but they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for a thousand years."

Before we begin our detailed study of verse 6, I would like to make several 'Over-View Comments' about this verse.

It appears to me that God through John's words is providing the reader with two very important pieces of **'Positive or Favorable Information for the Saved People, who are part of the → "...first resurrection..."**. I think these words would should be applied to the 'Group of Saints' that we identified in verse 4 and Dan. 12:1-2, see above.

First: The "Blessing" is identified as → "The second death has no power over them...", meaning, **'Spiritual Death' → Eternal Separation from God, 'Has No Power Over Them'**.

Second: To me this is, 'A Completion of the Promise Made by both God the Father and Jesus Christ'. This group will be; "Holy" meaning → "...they will be priest of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years."

NOTE: Keep in mind that this verse (verse 6) is written specifically to the group of saints that will rule with Jesus during His **'Millennial Reign on Earth'**. Also, remember, this group has 4 basic sub-sets, as follows:

First to be Resurrected: Jesus Christ—First Fruits, at Jesus Resurrection for the Dead ~ 33 AD

Second, Group to be Resurrected: Raptured Church—both dead and alive, just prior to the beginning of the 'Seven Year Tribulation Period',

Third, Group to be Resurrected: Old Testament Saints → Jewish Nation → Abraham to Just before Jesus Return at Armageddon, just prior to the 'Second Coming of Jesus Christ—Armageddon',

Fourth, Group to be Resurrected: Tribulation Saints, All during the 'Seven Year Tribulation Period—but Not to Extend Past the Second Coming of Jesus Christ'.

Also, I think the words in verse will be very harsh words for all of the unsaved people who have lived and died, up until this point.

Now I will break this verse down into its basic sub-sets and provide scripture to support my comments:

Verse 6: Part One: **“Blessed → and holy → are those who have part in the first resurrection.”** To me this verse appears to me to be very straight forward in its meaning, however, again I believe that the key to clearly understanding this verse is to understand: **‘Exactly Who It is Bring Written To’**, which we identified in the overview section above, (Raptured Church Saints, Resurrected/Converted Jewish Saints & Martyred Tribulation Saints).

First Detailed Point:

The Webster’s Dictionary, defines the word **“...blessed...”** as follows:

- a) ‘held in reverence’,
- b) ‘of or enjoying happiness’,
- c) ‘enjoying the bliss of heaven—used as a title for a beatified person’,

My Bible Dictionary defines it as: But where man is, in mind, it is used in the sense of **‘happy’ or ‘favored’**. Many scholars define it by quoting Psalm’s 1:1-2, **“Blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked or stand in the way of sinners or sit in the seat of mockers. But delights in the law of the Lord, and on His law he meditates day and night.”** Also, verses like Luke 1:42, **“Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the child you will bear!”** and the beatitudes → Matt. 5:3-12, **“Blessed are the poor in spirit...Blessed are those who mourn...Blessed are the meek...Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness...Blessed are the merciful...Blessed are the pure in heart...Blessed are the peacemakers... Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness...Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me.”** By reading all of these words I think we can ‘at least begin’ to understand the way God thinks about these people—saints. I like these last two quotes because I think they clarify the issues very well; 1 John 1:9, **“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just and will forgive us of our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.”** I really like

this one, 1 Cor. 6:11, “And that is what some of you were. → But you were washed, → you were sanctified, → you were justified → in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ → and by the Spirit of our God.”

Based on all of these definitions and scriptures I think we can safely say that this ‘Group of Saints’ were and will continue to be “blessed” for all of eternity.

Second Detailed Point:

The next word God gives us in our verse to describe this ‘Specific Group of Saints’ is the word “...holy...”. To me the first word God used was “...blessed...” which was extremely good news for this specific group of saints and I think is an indicator that something very good is about to come to this group. However, God does not leave ‘The Good News’ at, that this group will be “blessed” He/God now announces to ‘All of Creation’ that this ‘Specific Group of Saints’ is → “...holy...”. Again, to me this is the ‘Absolutely Best News’ any created being could receive from their creator—God; **You are now officially deemed to be → “...holy...” in the eyes of your creator.**

I will again list some of the definitions provided in my Webster’s Dictionary, as follows:

- a) exalted or worthy of complete devotion as one perfect in goodness and righteousness,
- b) Devoted entirely to the deity or the work of the deity,
- c) Having a divine quality.

My **Bible Dictionary** defines it as:

- a) **Hebrew—Old testament**, means; ‘godesh’ or ‘apartness, set-apartness, separateness, sacredness’, also ‘otherness, transcendent’.
- b) In the **New Testament**, means, ‘hagios’ or ‘set apart, reverend, sacred and worthy of veneration’.

Also, I have listed some of the scriptures used to define the meaning of **“holy”** and are broken into two groups, those speaking about **‘Gods Holiness’** and those speaking about **‘Man’s Holiness’**:

God’s Holiness:

Exodus 15:11, “Who among the gods is like you, O Lord? Who is like you—majestic in holiness, awesome in glory, working wonders?”

1 Samuel 2: “There is no Holy One, like the Lord; there is no one besides you; there is no rock like our God.”

Isaiah 6:3, “And they were calling to one another; ‘Holy, holy, holy is the Lord Almighty; the whole world is full of His glory’.”

Isaiah 43:15, “I am the Lord, your Holy One, Israel’s Creator, your King.”

Revelation 4:8, “Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. Day and night they never stop saying: ‘Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is , and is to come’.”

Man’s Holiness:

Leviticus 20:26, “You are to be Holy to me because I, the Lord, am Holy, and I have set you apart from the nations to be My own.”

Romans 6:22, But now that you have been set free from sin and have become slaves of God, the benefit you reap leads to holiness, and the result is eternal life.”

1 Peter, 2:9, “But you are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a Holy nation, a people belonging to God, that you may declare the praise of Him who called you out of darkness into His wonderful light.”

1 Thessalonians 4:7, “For God did not call us to be impure, but to live a Holy life.”

2 Corinthians 7:1, “Since we have these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that contaminates body and spirit perfecting Holiness out of reverence for God.”

Third Detailed Point: → **“...are those who have part in the first resurrection.”**

To me this part of verse 6 is simply identifying the group who will receive these two rewards, **“blessed & holy”**, which was defined in verse 5 and Dan. 12:1-2.

Re-Cap:

First to be Resurrected: Jesus Christ—First Fruits, at **Jesus Resurrection for the Dead** ~ 33 AD

Second, Group to be Resurrected: Raptured Church—both dead and alive, just prior to the beginning of the **‘Seven Year Tribulation Period’**,

Third, Group to be Resurrected: Old Testament Saints → Jewish Nation → Abraham to Just before Jesus Return at Armageddon, just prior to the **‘Second Coming of Jesus Christ—Armageddon’**,

Fourth, Group to be Resurrected: Tribulation Saints, All during the **‘Seven Year Tribulation Period—but Not to Extend Past the Second Coming of Jesus Christ’**.

Verse 6: Part Two: **“The second death has no power over them...”** Next I think we are now being told, by God, what some of the benefits are in being deemed, **“Blessing and Holy...”** by the God of Creation. To me the question is—How does the Bible define the **“second death”**?

I think this definition sounds correct to me: **‘The Bible, God's Word, clearly proclaims that there is a “second death.”** The first death is the physical death (meaning a loss of breath) and is when a man's soul/spirit are separated from his physical body. The second death is: **‘When a humans soul/spirit are separated from God for all of eternity’**. The location of the location where these (unsaved people) will be sent is called → **‘The Lake of Fire for all Eternity.’**

Next, I will provide some scripture to support this definition, most of which will come from the Book of Revelation, because the location of this place is talked about in Revelation more than any other book in the bible.

Revelation 20:14, “Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death.”

Revelation 21:8, “But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.”

Revelation 2:11, “He who has an ear, let him hear what the spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt at all by the second death.”

This concept—the second death, is also described in other books of the New Testament like this:

Matthew 25:46, “Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.”

1 Peter, 1:22-23, “Now that you have been purified yourselves by obeying the truth so that you have sincere love for your brothers, love one another deeply, from the heart. For you have been born again, not of perishable seed, but of imperishable, through the living and enduring word of God.”

Romans 6:23, “for the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

Matthew 10:28, “Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather be afraid of the one who can destroy both the soul and body in hell.”

Romans 1:32, “Although they know Gods righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death, they not only continue to do these very things but approve of those who practice them.”

I think you get the idea, 'The Concept of the Second Death' is → 'Separation from God for All of Eternity'.

Verse 6 Part Four: "...but they will be priest of God and of Christ and → will reign with Him for a thousand years." I believe that this portion of verse 6 provides the reader with more specific details about the **'Characteristics and Attributes'** about the group that was identified in verse 4 and 6a above: verse 6, "Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection." Except, this time the words appear to be describing, **'A Job Description'** that these saints will be performing for all of eternity.

These words provide the reader with two specific pieces of information about the job that these specific saints will have throughout eternity: Church Saints, The Tribulation Saints and The Jewish Saints.

First Piece of Additional Information: "...but they will be priest of God and of Christ..."

To me God uses very specific language in this portion of the verse, in which I believe God is making it known to all of creation, that **'This Specific Group of Saints'** has been given by the **'God of Creation'** the title of "...priest of God and of Christ...".

Now the next question is → **'What does this mean—the Title'** → "priest of God and of Christ..."? I have pulled together some information about this issue and added some of my own thoughts that I hope will help explain & define for us the word "priest", as it relates to: **'The Relationship Between God and Man'**. It appears to me that based on scripture this issue "priest" has been split into various time periods & levels, for men throughout the history of the world. However, it also appears to me to be a **'Major Biblical Concept'** that → Started in the 'Garden of Eden' and will end at the 'End of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'.

My Webster's Dictionary defines the word "priest" as follows: 'One authorized to perform the sacred rites of a religion; especially as a MEDIATORY AGENT

between man and God. In the text below I will list the scripture that spells out a lot of the details as it relates to, the **“priest”** of the Bible, but I think Webster’s provided us with a good beginning point—as it relates to a definition.

Now back to the **‘Different Time Periods, Levels and Participant’s Involved’**.

Priest—First Period → Adam to Adam:

At the very beginning no **“Priest”** were necessary (**Mediator**) as God walked with man and sin had not occurred, therefore there was no need for the **‘Remission of Sin’**, (this subject does not address the issue of Thanks or Praise); **‘Pre-Fall’** Gen. 3:8, **“Then the man and his wife heard the sound of the Lord God as He was walking in the cool of the day.”**

Priest—Second Period → Cain & Abel to Noah:

‘After the Fall’, at first every man was his own **“priest”**, and presented his own sacrifices before God, Gen. 4:3-6, **“In the course of time Cain brought some of the first fruits of the soil as and offering to the Lord. But Able brought fat portions from some of the first born of his flock. The Lord looked with favor on Abel and his offering, but on Cain and his offering He did not look with favor.”**

Priest—Third Period → Noah to Moses:

Note: Which extended to Moses and Arron – Exodus

It appears that at some point between **‘Cain & Abel and Noah’** that the office/position of **“priest”** moved to the head of the family:

- 1) **Noah**, Genesis 8:20, **“Then Noah built and altar to the Lord, taking some of all the clean animals and clean birds, he sacrificed burnt offerings on it.”**
- 2) **Abraham**, Genesis 12:7, **“To your off-spring I will give this land. So he (Abraham) built an altar there to the Lord, who had appeared to him.”**
Genesis 13:3-4, **“From the Negev he (Abraham) went from place to place until he came to Bethel, to the place between Bethel and Ai where his tent had been earlier and where he had first built an altar. There Abram called on the name of the Lord.”**

- 3) **Isaac**, Genesis 26:25-26, “Isaac built an altar there and called on the name of the Lord. There he pitched his tent, and there his servants dug a well.”
- 4) **Jacob**, Genesis 31:54, “He (Jacob) offered a sacrifice there in the hill country and invited his relatives to a meal. After they had eaten they spent the night there.” Gen. 35:1 & 7 & 14
- 5) **Job**, The Book of Job was written somewhere around 1,520 BC or about 30 years before Moses led the Israelites out of Egypt, therefore, it would pre-date the ‘Law, Temple and Temple Priest’, Job 1:5, “When a period of feasting had run its course, Job would send and have them purified. Early in the morning he would sacrifice a burnt offering for each of them, thinking, ‘Perhaps my children have sinned and cursed God in their hearts’. This was Job’s regular custom.”

NOTE: Based on my understanding of scripture it appears to me the responsibility of “priest” remained with the ‘Head of the Family’ until God moved it to Aaron (the exodus period) and his family.

Priest—Melchizedek → The scripture appears to indicate a LEVEL CHANGE, when talking about → Melchizedek:

The formal name “priest” was first applied to ‘Melchizedek’ in Genesis 14:18, “Then Melchizedek king of Salem (Jerusalem) → brought out bread and wine. → He was priest of God Most High, → and he blessed Abram, saying, → ‘Blessed be Abram by God Most High, Creator (Possessor) of heaven and earth. → And blessed (praise) be God Most High, who delivered your enemies into your hand’. → Then Abram gave him a tenth of everything.” First ‘tithes’ → establishing the amount & meaning.

To me there appears to be several concepts spelled out in this scripture, as follows:

Over View:

- 1) Melchizedek provided ‘food & wine’ for Abram for what appears to be a ‘sacrificial meal’.
- 2) Melchizedek was a ‘priest of God’.
- 3) Melchizedek ‘blessed Abram in the name of God the Most High’.

- 4) Melchizedek states that the **'God Most High'** is the **'Creator of Heaven and Earth'**.
- 5) Melchizedek, states that **'God Most High'** was the one who delivered Abrams enemies into his hands.
- 6) Abram **'willingly'** gave Melchizedek a **'tenth of everything'**.

Unique Details:

- 1) To me it appears that Abram – **'quickly and willingly'**; 100% accepted that Melchizedek was a **'priest of God Most High'** → there was no challenge to Melchizedek's position.
- 2) Also, in verse 22, Abram re-states and accepts that **'God Most High is the Creator'**, **"I have raised my hand to the Lord, God Most High, Creator of heaven and earth..."**

Next I would like to quote Psalms 110, as I think it ties together Gen. 14:18 & Psalms 110, with many **'End Times—Concepts'**, **"The Lord says to my Lord; → 'Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet'. → The Lord will extend your mighty scepter from Zion; → you will rule in the midst of your enemies. → Your troops will be willing on your day of battle. → Arrayed on holy majesty, from the womb of the dawn you will receive the dew of your youth. → The Lord has sworn and will not change His mind; → You are a priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek. → The Lord is at your right hand; → he will crush kings on the day of His wrath. → He will judge the nations, heaping up the dead and crushing the rulers of the whole earth. → He will drink from a brook beside the way; therefore, He will lift up His head."**

These two verses, Gen. 14:18 & Psalms 110, are talking about an order of **"priest"** that is not **'mortal'** and will be a **"priest"**, **'forever—eternal'**. The two priest being described in these two scripture passages are → **'Melchizedek and Jesus'**. There are some scholars who believe that **'Melchizedek is actually Jesus'**. I am not sure if the scripture is clear enough to make this statement but it does not really matter as the main point of these scriptures is that: **'There is a Human or Mortal order of Priest: after Aaron and → There is an Eternal Order of Priest—Not Mortal'**. **Note:** we will discuss the differences between the **'Mortal Priesthood and the Eternal Priesthood'** when we talk about → Jesus Christ and how He fulfills the position of **'High Priest'** for all of humanity, explained in the **Book of Hebrews**.

Priest—Forth Period → Moses to Jesus:

As I stated, during Israel's 400 years of bondage in Egypt the **'Head of the Family'** was the person who led the family in (worship—sacrifice) to God. However, during this period Israel had developed many bad practices (**idol worship**) that displeased God while they were in Egypt. An Example would be: after Israel's exodus from Egypt they carried many of these evil practices with them into the desert; remember in Genesis Chapters 32-33, when Moses went up on Mount Sinai to receive the **'stone tablets'** from God the people built a **"golden calf—idol"** and **"indulged in revelry"**. The Israelites had forgotten what God had just done for them → just 40 days earlier!

I think this is why God provided Israel with what we call the **'LAW'** → as spelled out throughout the Books of Genesis chapter 12-50 & all of the Book of Exodus & the Book of Leviticus & the Book of Numbers & the Book of Deuteronomy.

It is my opinion that God laid out **'His Law'** in great details in the **'First Five Books of the Bible'** because he knew that men were incapable of **'disciplining themselves without—detailed directions from their Creator'**. How do we know this → look at man's actions pre-Noah and again, Noah to Moses → Again, the answer is simple → **man is incapable of managing himself, as it relates to God without specific, detailed directions!**

To manage this process of applying the Law, God put into place a **'Structure or Order'** that is called, **'The Levitical Priesthood'**. Under the Levitical arrangements the office of the priesthood was limited to the tribe of Levi, and to only one family of that tribe, the family of Aaron. Certain laws respecting the qualifications of priests are given in Leviticus chapter 8-10 . There are ordinances also regarding the priests' dress in Exodus chapter 28 and the manner of their consecration to the office Exodus chapter 29, as well as, many others throughout these books. Their duties were laid out in all of the first five books of the Bible; examples would be, Exodus 27:20 & 21 & 29:38-44, also Leviticus 6:12 & 10:11 & 24:8, also Numbers 10:1-10, & Deuteronomy 17:8-13 and Malachi 2:7. Remember, these were the men who God Ordained to Represent the People before God and make the necessary offerings and sacrifices prescribed by Gods Law → So that their daily sins could be forgiven and God would not have to judge them! Remember the flood!

Then in the time of David the priests were divided into twenty-four courses or classes, which is described in 1 Chronicles 24:7-18 and was retained through the Babylonian Captivity, Ezra 2:36-39 & Nehemiah 7:39-42.

The priests were not distributed over the country, but lived together in certain cities (forty-eight in number, of which six were cities of refuge), which had been assigned to their use. From these specific cities they went up to minister in the temple at Jerusalem—as their specific turn came due. Therefore, the daily religious instruction of the people in the country generally was left to the heads of families, until the establishment of synagogues, an event which did not take place till the return from the Babylonian Captivity. The building of local synagogues became the central point and main source of the freedom from idolatry worship which had become somewhat ingrained in the Jewish people. However, over time even these **‘Worship Centers’** eventually fell to the **‘sin nature’** of the Jewish people and forced God to judge both the 10 northern tribes (Israel—722 BC) and the two southern tribes (Judah—586 BC).

The entire priestly system of the Jews people was what we would call of **‘foreshadowing’** of Jesus Christ → **‘The Shedding of Blood for the Remission of Sins’**. All of the priests, from Aaron to the last one just before Jesus all had to sacrifice blood offerings daily for the remission of sins of the people, whereas, Jesus Christ offered **“one sacrifice for sins → once for all”**, Hebrews 10:10 & 10:12.

And because of what Jesus Christ—the Son of God did for humanity, there was no longer and need for a human priesthood. (See Epistle to the Hebrews throughout.) The term **“priest”** is now applied to all believers, 1 Peter 2:9 & Revelation 1:5b-6, **“To Him who loves us and has freed us from our sins by His blood, and has made us to be a kingdom and priest to serve His God and Father...”** Therefore, because of Christ: (perfect life—death—resurrection and ascension to heaven) all true believers are now considered **“kings and priests of God and Jesus”**.

However, this position of **‘priest’** being talked about in 1 Peter, 2:4-12 & Revelation 1:5b-6, **“To Him who loves us and has freed us from our sins by His blood, and has made us to be a kingdom and priest to serve His God and father—to Him be glory and power for ever and ever! Amen.”** is what the scripture tells us should be consider an **‘OFFICAL— Replacement Order of Priest’**, not like the **‘Old Jewish Order’** because → Now a **‘Blood Sacrifice’** is no longer required as Jesus make it **‘once for all’**. However → What this **‘OFFICAL--**

Replacement Order of Priest' requires of us is to → **'Praise & Glorify & Give Thanks & Worship—God and Jesus all day long'**: which is exactly what our verse Rev. 20:6 is talking about, **"...but they will be priest of God and Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years."**

Priest—JESUS TO JESUS—the Church Period:

Jesus on Earth—the First Time:

I will list just some of the basics of, what I call, data points about this event as it relates to Jesus first coming—our **'Great High Priest'**.

- 1) **Jesus was appointed**—called to this position before the creation of the world, 1 Peter 1 :19-20, **"...but with the precious blood of Christ, a Lamb without blemish or defect. He (Jesus) was chosen before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for your sake."** This was always part of Gods Master Plan, because he knew man would fall and wanted to provide and escape plan for His, **'Beloved Creation'**.
- 2) **God the Father**, introduced this concept to men, back in the days of Abraham Gen. 14:18-24 → **'Melchizedek'**, then go back and read Psalm 110, focus on verse 4b, **"You are a priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek."** Remember this Psalm is talking about **Jesus Christ** → **Meaning—Eternal!**
 - a) Also, Heb. 5:10, **"...and was designated by God to be a High Priest in the order of Melchizedek."**
 - b) God in Hebrews 7: 1-3, continued the **'comparative explanation'** of Melchizedek & Jesus, **"This Melchizedek was the king of Salem and priest of God Most High. He met Abraham returning from the defeat of the kings and blessed him, and Abraham gave him a tenth of everything. First, his name means 'king of righteousness'; then also, 'king of Salem', means 'king of peace'. Without father or mother, without genealogy, without beginning or days or end of life, like the Son of God he remains a priest forever."**
- 3) It appears to me that God in Hebrews 4:14 to 7:28 provides the reader with a list of specific data points, so that all men will be able to understand this concept. I will list some of the major point below:
 - a) Heb. 7:3, **"Without father or mother, without genealogy, without beginning or days or end of life, like the Son of God he remains a priest forever."**

- b) Heb. 7:11, “If perfection could have been attained through the Levitical priesthood (for on the basis of it the law was given to the people), why was there still need for another priest to come—one in the order of Melchizedek, not in the order of Aaron?”
- c) Heb. 7:15-16, “And what we have said is even more clear if another priest like Melchizedek appears, one who has become a priest not on the basis of regulations as to His ancestry but on the basis of the power of an indestructible life.”
- d) Heb. 7:18-19, “The former regulation is set aside because it was weak and useless (for the law made nothing perfect), and a better hope is introduced, by which we draw near to God.”
- e) Heb. 7:20-22, “And it was not without an oath! Others became priest without any oath, but He became a priest with an oath when God said to Him; ‘The Lord has sworn and will not change His mind: You are a priest forever’. Because of this oath, Jesus has become the guarantee of a better covenant.”
- f) Heb. 7:24, “...but because Jesus lives forever, He has a permanent priesthood. Therefore, He is able to save completely those who come to God through Him, because He always lives to intercede for them.”
- g) Heb. 7:26, “Such a High Priest meets our needs—one who is Holy, blameless, pure, set apart from sinners, exalted above heaven.”
- h) Heb. 7:27-28, “Unlike the other high priest, He does not need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for His own sins, and then for the sins of the people. He sacrifices for their sins once for all when he offered Himself. For the law appointed as high priest men who are weak; but the oath, which came after the law, appointed the Son, who has been made perfect forever.”

Again, to gain a better understanding of this subject you need to go back and re-read Gen. 14:18-24 & Psalms 110 & Hebrews Chapters 4-7, in this order.

However, our story or history of this ‘**Priestly Process**’ does not stop here. I think to actually see → How man: **‘Mistakenly’** inter-wove these two priestly processes over the 2,000+ years, we need to recap the time period between ‘**Jesus Ascension**’ (33AD) to ‘**Jesus Second Coming**’ (still waiting) and see exactly: How many men have **‘Willfully and Sinfully Destroyed this Concept’**.

Priest—The Church Periods:

Church of Ephesus → 70—170 AD:

The church of Ephesus was the first church period and was known for ‘**Sound Doctrine**’, Rev. 2:2, **“I know your deeds, your hard work and your perseverance. I know that you cannot tolerate wicked men, that you have tested those who claim to be apostles but are not, and have found them false.”**

I think the men who ‘**Organized and Controlled**’ this first church period followed the structure as described in the Bible; mainly in 1 & 2 Timothy and Titus, which speaks about the qualifications of: **Elders/Bishops, Deacons, Preachers, Teachers and Evangelist**. They also followed, very closely, the doctrine—words of the New Testament and specifically much of the Book of Hebrews, which clearly states that ‘**The Resurrected Christ**’ was the ‘**High Priest**’ for all of humanity and there was **‘No Longer Any Need for a HUMAN PRIEST to Come Between God & Man → Because Jesus had Fulfilled this Requirement One For All’**.

1Peter 3:18, **“For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God.”**

NOTE: Therefore, because of this action by Jesus Christ, **the ‘Levitical Priesthood’** was no longer required—or any other human ‘**Priesthood**’ for other men.

Church of Smyrna → 170-312 AD:

The church of Smyrna was the second period church and was known for its great persecution & hardships, Rev. 2:9, **“I know your afflictions and your poverty—yet you are rich! I know the slander of those who say they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.”** This was truly a very hard/harsh period for Christians and many were killed because of their faith. However, I think God put in the last words of this verse to put the reader on notice that → something was changing; **“I know the slander of those who say they are Jews and are not but are a synagogue of Satan.”** This change would manifest itself in the next church period because the ‘**seeds of this deception**’ were being planted in this church

period. This **'deception'** was that the Jews involved wanted to go back to the **'worship—priestly'** concept **'pre-Christ'**, to include a **'Synagogue with Priest'** that would come between God and man,. Therefore, rendering the **'Life—Death—Resurrection—and Ascension of Jesus → MEANINGLESS'**. Again, this concept will surface in the next church period.

Church of Pergamum → 312-606 AD:

The church of Pergamum was the third church period and was known as **'A Sexually Immoral Church'**. Obviously there were many very devout Christians within this church **BUT** this was the period when much of the → **'Church Leadership Turned Their backs on God—in Favor of Worldly Things'**. Jesus Himself mentioned these two **'Un-Godly Doctrines'** in His words to this church → **'The Teaching of Balaam and the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans'**, which formally entered the **'Church of Jesus Christ'** during this church period, even though it's seeds were planted in the prior church period → This was truly a sad day for Christianity. Note: I think we today should keep this in mind—Exactly how deception Satan is and how his deception normally moves very slow, but building speed → Until its burst in to the public scene. Compare this to America over the last 75 to 85 years?

Balaamism: The word **'Pergamos'** means, **'marriage,'** and when the Church entered into a union with the State it was guilty of **'Spiritual Fornication' or 'Balaamism.'** The process of combining the Christian Church and State began in about 313 Ad and was completed in about 380 AD, Constantine, Emperor of the Western Roman Empire. Also, this **'Church Period'** extended from the accession of Constantine in 312 A.D. to 606 A.D., when Boniface III was crowned **'Universal Bishop or the First Pope, of the Holy Roman Church'**.

Nicolaitans: As I said before, this concept appears to have entered the church during the second church period—Smyrna. Remember this is a church that came under extreme persecution for their unyielding faith and belief in Jesus Christ and his teachings. And because of this, their life either ended in poverty or in prison or even death. Even though the word **'Nicolaitans'** is not mentioned in the letter to

the church at Smyrna it does reference, **“I know the slander of those who say they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.”** The key here being the Jews who wanted to go back to the old ways and reinstitute the **‘Levitical Priesthood’** which is again putting a middle **‘man’** between the each individual human and Jesus Christ—which is in reality the **‘Doctrine of the Nicolaitans’**. This effort supported by, **‘Jews & Gentiles who supported the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans’** secured a foothold in the church government during the **‘Smyrna Church Period’** which was evidenced in the voting of the → **‘First Great Council of the Church held at Nicaea, in A.D. 325’**. The Council was composed of about 1,500 delegates, the laymen outnumbering the Bishops 5 to 1, (1,250 layman & 250 clergy). It was a stormy council, full of intrigue and political methods (sounds like America today). The outcome was → the supremacy of the **‘Clergy’** over the **‘Laity’**, which again is evidence that the **‘Doctrine of the Nicolaitans’** had secured a strong and permanent foothold in the **‘Church of Jesus Christ’**. This **‘Sinful Intrusion’** (priest between man and God) would continue until the **‘Reformation Period’**, at which time it would be partially reversed.

Again, this was the church period in which → Many of the **Major Doctrines of the Church of Jesus Christ** were **‘Corrupted’** and many **‘Satanic Doctrines’** entered the formal church—Holy Roman Church.

The Church of Thyatira → 606-1,517:

The church at Thyatira was the fourth church period and was known as a the **‘papal church and ‘sacerdotalism’** → **a religious belief emphasizing the power of the priest as → essential mediators between God and men and → NOT JUST JESUS CHRIST.** Remember the church leadership began the process of adding this concept (Counsel of Nicaea—325AD) to the church in **‘The Church Period of Smyrna’** → then began perfecting it in the **‘Church Period of Pergamum’** (Balaamism & Doctrine of the Nicolaitans) and → Now in the **‘Church Period of Thyatira’** → Expand this concept to a new level. God points this out with His words to this church, Rev. 2:20, **“Nevertheless, I have this against you; ‘You tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. → By her**

teaching she mislead My servants into sexual immorality and the eating of foods sacrificed to idola.”

I think if you go back and read the account of Ahab and Jezebel (1 Kings 16:29 through chapter 22) you will find that Jezebel was the one who had the most input or influence in leading the nation of Israel astray—away from God. Again I believe that God is using the story of Jezebel and what she did to Israel as an analogy of what the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans and Balaamism was doing to the actual church at Thyatira as well as the church from a prophetic standpoint.

Also, in this verse Jesus Christ makes the following statement, **“By her teachings she misleads my servants into sexual immorality and the eating of food sacrificed to idols.”** Below I will try to list some of the major areas that I believe Jesus Christ was talking about:

- 1) The new system → **‘The papal state/church’** professed to have great power and insight into the **‘Will of God’** that normal men could not attain.
- 2) The **‘New Papal State/Church System’** changed the relationship between man and God the Father as being one that had to pass through Jesus Christ → to one that had to pass through the church leadership → as well as → others → and then Jesus Christ (last); see examples.

Examples: Of what Jesus Christ meant when he said, **“...she mislead my servants”**:

ONE: Added the belief that Mary, Jesus Christ mother was the queen of heaven and we could also pray through Mary to get to God the Father and not just through Jesus Christ,

TWO: We can pray for the dead and help them pass on to heaven,

THREE: The pope speaks to men on the behalf of Jesus Christ and God the Father, 1 Tim. 2:5, **“For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Jesus Christ.”**,

FOUR: Intertwined Gods scriptural celebrations/ feasible with pagan rituals/actives.

- 3) Fornication here is described as **'illicit intercourse'** by the church with the world. This process was started by Constantine and the **'papal church/state'**. The papacy is the one who perfected the union of the church and the world, which equals **'spiritual fornication'**.
- 4) Idol worship was the next big thing to enter the church during this period/church: holy days, rites, ceremonies, vestments, papal doctrines of which most if not all are directly traceable back to pagan origins.
- 5) When this church/system substituted its own, images, pictures and system of worship for that of Gods it became **"idolatrous"**.
- 6) When the church/system substituted its own words for the word of God it became a **"prophetess"**.

Last, I think it is also interesting that this church period lasted 914 years, the longest church period, which always amazed me until you read Gods words, **"I have given her time to repent of her immorality, → but she is unwilling."** I think this once again proves that God GRACE is long-suffering (not wanting any to perish) but it does have a limit.

NOTE 1: Also, keep in mind that the **'Dark Ages of Europe'** were from ~400 to 1,400 AD! This was also the same time period as the **'Black Plague in Europe'** (1,347 to 1,351), which killed somewhere between 30 to 60 % of the population. Tie this in with Jesus words to this church—period, Rev. 2:22-23, **"So I will cast her on a bed of suffering and I will make those who commit adultery with her suffer intensely, unless they repent of their ways. I will strike her children dead. Then all the churches will know that I am He who searches the hearts and minds, and I will repay each of you according to your deeds."** Which is exactly what God did to Europe.

NOTE 2: However, keep in mind that there was a **'True Body of Believers Living During this Period—Sardis'**, that would blossom during the next church period, Rev. 2:24-25, **"Now I say to the rest of you living in Thyatira, to you who do not"**

hold to her teachings and have not learned Satan's so called deep secrets (I will not impose any other burdens on you); Only hold to what you have until I come."

Church of Sardis → 1,520 to ~ 1,750-1,800:

The church at Sardis was the fifth church period and was the period in which the church of Jesus Christ, split into two forms: The **Reformation Church** and a continuation of the **papal church**.

The Reformation Church → This process began in about 1,517 when Martin Luther nailed his 95 theses on the Wittenberg door. However, God had already done the prep-work for this '**Reformation of the True Body of Believers**', as follows:

- 1) Invention of the printing press → 1,450 AD,
- 2) Discovery of America → 1,492,
- 3) Actual Bibles printed in every language → ~ 1,500,
- 4) Martin Luther's 95 Theses on the Wittenberg door → 1,520,
- 5) Pilgrims go to America in 1,620 to worship as they interpret the bible

Through these actions there is no question that → God provided an escape plan for the '**true body of believers**', which would allow '**The True Church of Jesus Christ**' to, once again flourish throughout the world – the Church of Philadelphia.

I think Jesus made it plain that there were again, two groups within this one church period; I think these words applied to the **true body of believers**, Rev. 3:4-5, "Yet you have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes. They will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. He who overcomes will like them be dressed in white. I will never erase his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before My Father and His angels."

The Papal Church → During this same period (~ 1,520 to ~ 1,750-1,800) the '**Papal Church**' made some minor reforms but primarily focused its efforts on → **Hunting Down the Reformers and KILLING THEM as Heretics**. Also, know that this process of killing reformers expanded to → '**All True Believers and Jews as well**'.

These are the words to this group (Papal Church), Rev. 3:1a-3, **“I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead. Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have not found your deeds complete in the sight of My God. Remember, therefore, what you have received and heard; obey it, and repent. But if you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what time I will come to you.”**

Again, the men who led the Papal church were ‘living and leading this church in the ways of Satan’; Rev. 2:13b, **“...where Satan lives.”**

Church Chronology → **What ‘EVIL’ that started in Smyrna (170-312 AD)** → **came to life in Pergamum (312-606 AD)** → **then completely engulfed the church in Thyatira (606-1,520 AD)** → **however, the church of Sardis (1,520 to 1,750-1,800 AD)** → **is where God intervened and split the church into two parts:**

1) the Reformed Church—the True Body of Believers, which will lead to the ‘Church of Philadelphia (the Evangelism Church)

2) a continuation of the false church –the papal church, which will humanity to ‘The Church of Laodicea’.

Church of Philadelphia → **~1,750-1,800 to 1,950-1,960:**

Next, the church in Philadelphia was the sixth church period and was known as the ‘**Revival or Evangelism Church**’. The Holy Spirit touched the hearts of many men, women and children during this 200+ year period. I think that the actions of this church period was the outgrowth of the seeds that were planted during the ‘**Sardis Church Period**’ → **God at Work & Protecting His People.**

I have listed a few of the men who preached during this period:

George Whitefield, 1739 AD was credited by many as the father of this movement, → Asahel Nettelon, → James B. Taylor, → Charles Finney(1820), → Layman Beecher, → Barton Stone, → Alexander Campbell, → Peter Cartwright, → John Wesley, → D. L. Moody and Johann G. Hamann.

However, keep in mind that there were many hundreds maybe even thousands that preached and taught during this period. It was truly the time of great revival, → larger tent meetings, → revival hymns were being written and many people on all continents, Europe and North American and Africa and South America and Asia were being saved. This period was also marked by global evangelism and many people were saved throughout the far reaches of the world. To me this church period looks similar to the church period that existed during the time of the Apostles and that of Ephesus; from the standpoint of the Apostles, these men & women had the same feverish intensity for **'evangelism'** as the apostles: → missionaries were sent to places throughout the world where they suffered greatly even to the point of death.

The words of Jesus I think confirm the efforts of these men & women, Rev. 3:8-10, **"I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door that no one can shut. I know that you have little strength, yet you have kept My word and have not denied My name. I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews though they are not, but are liars—I will make them come and fall down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you. Since you have kept My commands to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth."**

Church of Laodicea → ~ 1,950-1,960 to the Rapture of the Church:

The church in Laodicea was the seventh church period and was known as the **'lukewarm or materialist or modern church'**. Again, this church period will last from ~ 1,950-1,960 to the **'Rapture of the True Body of Believers'**.

I think to have a real appreciation of what Jesus Christ is trying to convey to the reader in his letter to the actual church in Laodicea and the prophetic church of Laodicea we need to clearly understand that this is the final letter/description of the church period on earth. This period is the culmination of all the events that have happened in the other six church periods. In each of these previous six church periods Satan has been at work trying to gain a strong foothold within the

church itself. We can go back and review each church period to better understand how this was happening, some key words/phrases to look for would be: “Nicolaitans”, “Balaam”, “synagogue of Satan”, “Jezebel”, “Satan’s so-called deep secrets”, “but you are dead”, “synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews though they are not, but are liars” “Because you are lukewarm”. And now we come to the last prophetic church period, the church of Laodicea, which after the rapture of the ‘true body of believers’ will become part of the church of Satan’s and the Antichrist, and the False Prophet: ‘One World Religious System’. This apostate church is described in some details in Revelations 13:11-18, and its destruction in Revelations chapter 17. Also, in Revelations 13:1-10 and chapter 18 the interweaving of the ‘One World Global Government & Economic System’ and church are referenced. We can discuss this concept of global government and church lead by one person/antichrist more in class.

NOTE: Always keep in mind when talking or thinking about the, ‘One World Religious System’ or the ‘One World Global Government & Economic System’ that they are ‘Systems Designed by Satan → To Keep Humans Away from God’. This has been Satan’s primary goal, which began with ‘Adam & Eve in the Garden of Eden’ and will not ‘End—Stop’ until he/Satan is released after Jesus Millennial Reign on Earth’ and he/Satan is cast in to the ‘Burning Lake of Sulfur for Eternity’.

Priest—The Tribulation Period → Rapture to Second Coming of Jesus Christ:

This seven year period will be what I would call a very, very chaotic period and will contain many forms of what we have been calling ‘priest’. I believe that the church that we have been calling the ‘Church of Laodicea’, after the ‘Rapture of the True Church’ will → Turn into the ‘One World Religion System’ led by the ‘False Prophet’. This religious system will continue to have ‘human priest’ just as the ‘false church from which it came did’. Except this time they will be ‘outwardly priest of Satan’!

The other **'Religious/church System—Ture Body of Believers'** during this period will be made up of the people who have been saved after the rapture of the church. Based on the scripture I believe that this seven year period will be split into two section: the first 3 ½ years & the second 3 ½ years. I also think that each of these 3 ½ years periods will be very different in terms of: **'How this Groups of Saints will be Treated'**.

During the first 3 ½ years people will be saved and I believe that there will be; preachers, teachers and evangelist, just like today. However, during this first period there will be ever increasing pressure on them to **'forsake God and follow the world'**.

During the second 3 ½ years people who are saved will be **'outcast in a world who hates them'**. They will not be able to **'buy or sell'** because they did not take the **'mark of the beast'** and all of the world governments will be trying to kill them. This same process will be going on for the Israel and the Jews as well. Remember, Satan will have been cast out of heaven at the mid-point of the seven year tribulation period, and he/Satan will set himself up as the **'Leader –god of the One World Government, Economic & Religious System'** for this last 3 ½ year period.

For both of these two periods, Jesus Christ will be their **'High Priest-Mediator'** for all saved people who are living on the earth—there will be no formal religious human priestly system—order, except for each saved person.

Priest—Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ—Priestly Order:

At the beginning of the Millennial Reign of Jesus, there will be a variety of changes made to the:

- 1) Governmental Structure and
- 2) The Religious Structure on the Earth

Governmental Structure:

Remember during the **'Seven Year Tribulation Period'** that the **'Government & Religion of the Earth'** will be interwoven, under the **'antichrist/Satan'**. This same structure will also be true for the **Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth**. Except this time the **'Leader of both Earth & Heaven will be Jesus Christ'**. Scripture tells us that He/Jesu will be a **'Leader'** in at least four specific areas:

ONE: Jesus the Conquer →

At **'Jesus Christ Second Coming'** He will **'destroy—kill or capture all unsaved beings'**. I believe that this is Gods way of removing all **'sinful temptation'** from the earth for the **'saved people & their children'** who will populate the earth for the 1,000 years. It appears this group of people will certainly have an advantage over the period from Adam to the end of the tribulation period, as it relates to external temptation.

- 1) **Conquer → Of the 'Earth-Nations':** Rev. 19:11-18, partial, 15-16, **"Out of His mouth come a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. He will rule them with and iron scepter..."**
- 2) **Conquer → Of 'Antichrist and False Prophet':** Rev. 19:20, **"But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet...The two were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur."**
- 3) **Conquer → Of the 'Un-saved People of the Earth':** Rev. 19:21, **"The rest of them were killed with the sword that came out of the mouth of the rider on the horse, and all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh."**
- 4) **Conquer → Of Satan':**
 - a) **Captured Satan for → '1,000 Years':** Rev. 20:1-3, **"He seized the dragon, that ancient, who is the devil or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years."**
 - b) **Conquered → 'Satan for Eternity':** Rev. 20:10, **"And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."**

TWO: Jesus the Ruler →

Also, during this 1,000 years period, Jesus Christ will be the **'Sole (undisputed) Ruler of Planet Earth'**, Rev. 19:16, **"On His robe and on His thigh He has a name written; 'KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS'."** I think it is interesting that, Satan—the antichrist and the false prophet were the **'sole—undisputed rulers'** of the earth for the last 3 ½ years of the seven year tribulation period and now Jesus and **'his-saints'** will rule the earth for 1,000 years! I think the math in this equation looks bad for **'Satan—the antichrist and false prophet'** & very good for Jesus and **'his-saints'**.

Also, later in Revelation Chapter 21-22 we will see that the equation will get even worst for **'Satan—the antichrist and the false prophet'**, as they will spend **'eternity in the lake of burning sulfur'** & Jesus and **'his-saints'** will spend **'eternity in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem—with the 'trinity' and the loyal angels of heaven and all of the other saints'**.

I think this is the best example that anyone could provide to humanity in general: This is the results that God wanted for all humans and He/God even provided men with a **'Method to Obtain a free of Cost → Second Chance'**

- 1) A way to redeem themselves—the **blood of Jesus Christ the Son of God**,
- 2) The **'freewill'** to accept this **'free gift'**.

THREE: Jesus the High Priest →

The scripture tells us that Jesus, in actuality, has been and will continue to be the **'High Priest'** for all men who have ever been saved. At Jesus resurrection a **'Spiritual Explosion'** took place that went back in time and **'paid the credit issued by God (remember Abraham)'** for the sins of people pre-Jesus and then went forward to pay for all of the sins that would be committed in the future, if people would only repent and believe. This same **'payment'** will hold true for the people saved during the 1,000 years reign of Jesus on earth. Jesus replaced the need for any human priest to offer a **'sacrifice'**, as it relates to them making a **'blood sacrifice'** for the redemption of sins for themselves or others, when He was

resurrected. Heb. 10:10, “And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.” Matt. 26:28, “this is the blood of the new covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins.” Heb. 4:14, “Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we possess.” Also, Heb. 5:6, “And He says in another place, ‘You (Jesus) are a priest forever, in the order of Melchizedek’.” And Heb. 5:8-10, “Although He was a son, He learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, He became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey Him, and was designed by God to be high priest in the order of Melchizedek,”

However, during this same 1,000 year period there will be another kind of **‘priest’** like the one described in our verse, Rev. 20:6b, “The second death has no power over them, but they will be priest of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years.” I will outline some of what I think will be the duties, characteristics and attributes of these **‘priest—saints’**, during this 1,000 years period.

- 1) They will be composed of three groups of saints: **Raptured Church, Tribulation Saints and Jewish Saints**, see above for details.
- 2) They will assist Jesus rule—govern the earth during this 1,000 year period, Rev. 20:4b, “They came to life and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.” And 1 Cor. 6:3, “Do you not know that the saints will judge the world?...Do you not know that we will judge angels?” Exactly, how this process will work or be implemented is ‘Not Stated in Scripture’.
- 3) Based on all of the scripture that we have discussed about this **‘Specific Group of Saints’** and the office of **‘Priest’** I believe that they will also function as a **‘Very Unique Kind of Priest’** during this 1,000 year period. It appears to me based on our scripture studied, that their priestly duties will be focused on being → ‘Preachers & Teachers & Evangelist & Shepherds & Care-Takers, as well as, Judges at the Local, National and Global Level’, you get the idea. Remember, Jesus Christ will walk the earth during this 1,000 year period and He will function as our **‘High Priest’**, therefore, there

will be no need of a priest to make sacrifices for our sins as Jesus has already done this once for all of humanity that will repent and believe.

Priest: The Priest in Eternity →

This is the last period that God has provided any descriptions for; **‘His Created Beings’** about the word **“Priest”**. I think to correctly understand this ‘word—office during this period—eternity’ we need to look at Revelation Chapters 21 & 22. I will list some of what I think are the more important data points, as follows:

First: Keep on mind that all of Gods Saints and loyal angels will be in heaven with **‘The Trinity’** forever—eternity.

Second: The old heaven and old earth will have been destroyed by God/Trinity, because they were tainted with sin and the **‘New Heaven, New Earth and New Jerusalem’** will be **‘SIN FREE’**.

Third: Based on all of this, and scripture in general, there will be no need for a **‘priest’**, as described in both the Old & New Testament, because there will no longer be a need for the redemption of sin: **‘Because During This Period-- Eternity → ‘All Sin Will Have Been Removed From ALL the BEING now in the ‘NEW CREATION’.** This will truly be a great day for all of the **‘Beings’** in heaven → **Completely Cleansed of Sin & the Ability to Sin → Forever.**

Forth: However, there will be; **‘What I call → A New Kind of Priest During this Period—Eternity’**. Many if not most scholars believe that during this period—eternity the **‘Church Saints’** will **‘live—reside’** in the **‘New Jerusalem’**. They also believe that their **‘Jobs’** will be to function as a **‘kind of priest to God and Jesus and Holy Spirit’**. However, their function will be to: Serve and Praise the Trinity for all of Eternity, just as we see the **‘Twenty Four Elders and Four Living Creatures’** did in Revelation Chapter 4. We will discuss this more in Revelation Chapter 21 & 22.

Verse 6 Part 5 → **“...and they will reign with Him (Jesus) for a thousand years.”**

To me it is very clear that God is providing the reader the specific time frame that will be involved in this specific event, which will be 1,000 years.

Summary for Verses 1-6:

One: Satan will be locked away for 1,000 years,

Two: The saints who will **'Rule and Judge as Priest'** during the 1,000 years reign of Jesus on earth are identified: **Raptured Church, Tribulation Saints and Jewish Saints,**

Three: This group of saints are told that **"the second death has no power over them."**

Four: We are not told, why God removed all of, what I would call **'secondary temptation—sin'** from the earth during this 1,000 year period → **'specifically Satan and his fallen angels'** or **'Why these people would be allowed to see Jesus walk on the earth among them for 1,000 years in all His 'Power and Goodness'.** Therefore, based on all of this, it would appear to me that the people living during this period, would have been provided a great advantage over the people living during the time period when Satan and his demons were able to **'tempt humans & Jesus was in heaven' (time of the church).** Again, not sure why God did this, except to show men → **'Just How Evil they Really are , on Their Own—without any Additional Temptation'**. We know this because God provides us the outcome in verses 7-8 out next verses in chapter 20. **"When the thousand years were over, → Satan will be released from his prison and → will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog → to gather them for battle. → In number they are like the sands on the sea shore."**

Therefore, to me it would appear that **'Humans Have a Basic, REBELLIOUS NATURE'**, which we call **'Freewill'** and that first manifested itself in **Eve & Adam** and will not stop until **'All of the Saints are in the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'** at which time it would appear, based on scripture, that this **'Rebellious Sin Nature' → 'Will Have Been Removed'** from our **'HUMAN NATURE—for All of Eternity'**. Again, this will truly be a **'Great Day for Those of God'** and truly a **'Sad Day for those Not of God'**.

Third Topic—Chapter 20:

Now in **verses 7-10** God through John's words provides the reader with information as it relates to the → **'Description of another 'Specific Event' that will take place on Earth at the end of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ, → which will be the Release of Satan, after he was locked-up in the Abyss, for 1,000 years, to GO—OUT & Again Tempt the Nations to Rebel Against their Creator'**. I will break these 4 verses down into their basic sub-sets, to make it easier for us to study.

Verse 7 → "When the thousand years are over, → Satan will be released from his prison **Verse 8 → and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog → to gather them for battle. In number they are like the sands on the seashore.** **Verse 9 → They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of God's people, the city He loves. → But fire came down from heaven and devoured them.** **Verse 10 → And the devil, who deceived them, → was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, → where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. → They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."**

Again it seems to me that these four verses provide the reader with a variety of sub-points about this 'event', but it appears that the core concept is:

- 1) 'How **STRONG** the Sin Nature of Humanity, Really Is' and
- 2) 'How This Verse Makes It Very Clear Just—How Much Satan Hates his Creator/God → And Will Try to Over-Throw God Until His Last Second of Freedom'

NOTE: I think these two points really demonstrate; maybe, **'The Saddest Point of Some Created Being' → 'There OVER—WHELMING DESIRE TO BE GOD'**. Also; How they manifested this rebellion in their heart, after God → **Loved them so-much that He created them Perfect, in a Perfect Environment which Provided for Their Every Need and Walked with them for 1,000 years.** **BUT** → He-God created them with '**FREEWILL**' (Which is the **KEY**—so that they would be able to

choose for themselves) → Do I willingly Love and Obey God or do I decide to rebel and serve something else 'self—Satan—the world—etc.'.

Again, God created a plan that would have allowed His 'Created Beings' to 'Begin and Remain Perfect' but the **'Choice was Theirs'**. Adam & Eve made the first to rebel and for their rebellion they received what we call **'a sin nature'**. This **'sin nature'** was then passed on to all humans who followed. At this point Satan would have won; except God knew this in advance, therefore, He/God had already provided a plan for man to 'Reconcile Himself Back to God', which was the 'Shed Blood of Jesus—His/Gods Son – For those Who Would Believe'. It appears to me that God knew that 'Mans Freewill Would Separate him from God', therefore, He/God also developed a plan that would also let it be 'Mans Freewill' that would allow him to 'Reconcile himself Back to God'. What a Sad day it will be for those who chose unwisely.

Verse 7 → "When the thousand years are over, → Satan will be released from his prison..." I believe that there are two major points in verse 7, which are as follows:

Verse 7 → Part One: "When the thousand years are over..."

In this verse God tells the reader, through Johns words, that this will be the next event to happen in Johns vision and it will happen, just after the end of the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth. As I said in the 'Conclusion Portion' of our 'Second Topic' above it appears that God put these words in next to point out just how **'Rebellious and Evil the Human Nature, Really Is'**, which we have already discussed above. Also, God does not tell us, how long this event will take to complete, however, based on the words in verse 9, "They marched across the breath of the earth..." it would appear that this event will take, as least, some time to complete—again timing unknown!

Verse 7 → Point Two: "...Satan will be released from his prison..."

Again, I am not exactly sure why God would release Satan at this point in time except to show **'All of Humanity—Exactly How Easily Their Hearts Are**

Corrupted'. Remember, this group of humans → **Lived Under Jesus Christ—Leadership & Example for 1,000 years!** However, there are some scholars who believe that this is analogous with the Genesis Concept, Gen. 3:1-7, when God allowed Satan to move from heaven (**which he had already tainted with sin**) to earth where he tempted '**Eve & Adam**' and the three of them, also (**'Tainted the earth with sin**).

I think these verses 7-10 also prove beyond any doubt, that man can also be very '**deceptive**' and what you see on the outside may not be what is on the inside. It appears to me that many of the people living during this 1,000 year period acted like they were '**following the commands of Jesus**'. However, on the inside they were actually '**Harboring Very Sinful Thoughts Even Though They Did Not Act on Them**'. Again, to me this proves that what you see on the out side may not be what is on the inside—'**Which Has Benn the Case Since Time Began**'. Humanity has always possessed, '**two manifestations of sin**', as it relates to this subject:

- 1) Sin that is '**Harbored within the Beings Heart, Soul, Mind or Being**' and which is never → **Acted Upon**,
- 2) Sin that has its beginning in the → '**Beings Heart, Soul, Mind or Being**' of a **specific being**' and moves to the → '**Acted Stage—meaning Physical Events/Actions take place**'.

I think this is what we are seeing in our verses, '**What had been 'Harbored in the Soul of these Humans' is Now Manifesting itself into Actions**'.

NOTE: Keep in mind that Jesus knew all of this throughout His/Jesus 1,000 year reign on earth. However, it appears that He/Jesus did not act on the '**harbored sins**' unless they acted on them. We are not told why, however, it is my opinion that He/Jesus wanted to give each human as much time as possible to repent and be saved. Just like He/Jesus/God has always done.

Verse 8: "**...and will go out to deceive the nations** → **in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle.** → **In number they are like the sands of the seashore.**" To me in verse 8 God provides the reader with at

least three major 'attributes & characteristics' about 'Satan and the Some of the People on the Earth' living at the end of the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth, which are:

Verse 8 → Point One: **"...and will go out to deceive the nations..."**

I think God put these words in for one very specific reason and to really understand you need to re-read the last part of verse 7 with these words, **"...Satan will be released from his prison, → and will go out to deceive the nations..."** Again, I think God put these words in to show **'What Satan's first Action would be, after being locked up for 1,000 years'**. He—Satan did not go and see how his fallen angels were done (1/3) any or how any of his friends were doing (he does not have any) nor did he re-think his previous action and repent, **'He went straight to work, Rebelling Against God and trying to take as many humans to hell as he possible could, before he is stopped permanently'**.

NOTE:

I think that all people of the world would do well to remember/understand that one of Satan's primary goals is to → Cause as many people as possible to rebel against God and be lost, with him, For all of Eternity → He—Satan, HAS NO LOVE FOR ANYONE!

Verse 8 → Point Two:

"...in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle."

I think that within these words, God provides the reader with several key pieces of information about the → **'Human Heart'**.

One: The fact that people throughout the entire world were **'harboring sin within their hearts'**, as well as, throughout the entire 1,000 years reign of Jesus on earth, **"...in the four corners of the earth..."** again, meaning not just one specific area, but everywhere in the world.

Two: Scholars have developed several views as to the meaning of this section, as follows:

- 1) They reference back to Ezekiel , Chapters 38 & 39 and reference the Russian lead collation that will attack Israel, and believe that these same **'People Groups/Nations'** will come back and lead the attack again.
- 2) Other scholars believe that God is using these names **'Gog—Magog'** which were used in Ezekiel 38 & 39 and have always **'Hated Gods People'**, and are again being used to describe the **'People Groups of the World'** who have always hated God and His People. Another words, a general comparison.
- 3) Again, some scholars believe that because **"...Gog—Magog..."** are the actual words being used, this event will be the **'Actual Battle—Described in Ezekiel Chapters 38 & 39'**. If you go back and read Ezekiel 38 & 39, I think you will find the timing of these two events would make this impossible.
- 4) Last, it appears to me that at least one of the reasons God put these words in was to let the reader know that there was **→ Some Worldly Leadership—Waiting in the shadows to take up the → Down With God banner Again.**

Three: **"...to gather them for battle."** To me the last words within this section, simply state the reason for Satan's release, **"...to gather them for battle."** I think the other point that needs to be made here is that **'They were all eagerly waiting for this moment in time → no one had to twist their arms— they never really loved God'**. As I have said before, this one event is one of the most puzzling event in the history of humanity. These same humans walked with Jesus on the earth for 1,000 years and experienced **'His Divine Goodness'** and still rebelled. To me this is on the same level as Adam & Eve in the garden of Eden.

Verse 8 → Point Three:

"In number they are like the sands of the seashore."

I have talked about this issue in several points above and still cannot understand; **'How this many people—after living with Jesus—Love and Goodness could rebel and be fooled by Satan again → I guess you just cannot fix stupid—or a Rebellious Heart.** Some scholars believe that this is a simple human characteristic, **'Bow the knee when you see that you have lost and have no power to resist → however, when you think you NOW HAVE THE ADVANTAGE' rise up and Fight'**. They use scripture like, Ps. 66:3, **"Say to God, 'How awesome are Your deeds! So great is your power that your enemies cringe before you'."** And Ps. 18:44-45, **"As soon as they hear Me, they obey me. They all lose heart; they come trembling from their strongholds'."** Again, to support how they believe many people will act during this 1,000 year reign of Jesus Christ on earth. (However, for these verses to support their view: It would mean that all of these people would have to believe that Satan is **→ Now More Powerful Than God.** This would have to be the biggest **'Deception'** that has ever taken place in the history of the world. Again, at the same level of Adam & Eve in the garden of Eden.

Note: Again, I do not think I understand this kind of thinking by humans. I know all humans have been granted by God **→ 'Freewill to Choose to believe in Jesus, Free Gift of Repentance & Salvation or to Rebel and Believe in Something Else'**.

And if you were in a place within the world, where you have never heard of Jesus and His **'Good News Gospel'**, that would be at least something you could point to as a defense at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**.

Or if you grew up in the most evil of societies that had ever existed and had never heard of **'Jesus and His Good News Gospel'**, that would at least be something to offer up as an excuse at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**.

Or if you were raised in a situation where your parents died when you were young and you were cast out and had no one to teach you anything about, **'Jesus and His Good News Gospel'**, that may also be something you could offer up as an excuse at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**.

BUT → These people living during this **'Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth'** will have none of these excuses at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'** because they

actually had Jesus Himself to show them the way for at least some part of the 1,000 year period. To me this would mean that they were personally rejecting the **'Good News Gospel'** and it was **'Actually Being Presented (face to face)'** by their → **'Living Lord' therefore Making Him and His Life a Lie'**. I am not exactly sure how this will play out at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**, however I think Matt. 10:33 may give us some indication, **"But whoever disowns Me before men, I will disown him before My Father in heaven."** This will be a real sad day for some!

Verse 9:

"They marched across the breadth of the earth and → surrounded the camp of God's people, → the city He loves. → But fire came down from heaven and devoured them."

Verse 9 → Point One:

"They marched across the breadth of the earth and..." It appears to me that God is providing the reader with three specific pieces of information, as follows:

One: Again, I think God is telling us that there will be many people involved in this specific rebellion, and that will be from all parts of the earth. Remember, at the end of verse 8 we were told that they would be like, **"In number they are like the sand of the seashore."** Again, seems like lot to me.

Two: Also, it appears to me that another point that God is making clear for the reader is **'That This Specific Rebellion Will Also Be Wide-Spread'**, **"...across the breadth of the earth..."** Remember the words God used in Rev. 13:7b to describe the **'Power & Influence'** that Satan's antichrist had over the people of the earth during the tribulation period, **"And he was given authority over every tribe, language and nation. All the inhabitants of the earth worshiped the beast..."** This appears to me to be very similar to the **'Golden Calf—Incident'** that took place shortly after they left Egypt. If man are left to their own thought's for any length of time they will always → **'Move Far Away From God —Very Fast:**

Regardless of How Much He Has Just Done For Them'. Again, a very sad commentary on humans.

Three: Given this army had **"...marched across the breath of the earth..."** to meet its enemy, specifically God—Israel—Jerusalem, and there appears to no mention about them meeting any resistance. Again, it does not appear to be any resistance from the rest of the world's population. I am not sure how to interpret these words or even this concept. However, I think there will be a lot more going on during this event than what we are being told in this specific scripture:

Possible Reasons: Could be God has pulled all of the saved people back to show off His glory or they could have been taken to heaven, Again, Not sure how this will work out but I am sure it will something to see! However, I am 100% sure that at this point in man's history, **'Gods Saints will be Protected from Satan and his'**.

Verse 9 → Point Two:

"...surrounded the camp of God's people, → the city He loves."

To me in this next portion of verse 9, God is going to tell the reader something about the 'Location' of where 'Satan & his armies are heading'. I am not sure why but God appears to provide two pieces of information about this location: first **"the camp of God's people"** and second **"the city"**.

First Piece of Information: The first portion of this verse is somewhat interesting because of the specific wording used, **"...surrounding—the camp of God's people..."** I will first comment on the word, **"surrounding"**, which to me bring to mind several questions:

Question 1: Given the fact that → If Satan and his armies can **'surround'** – **"the camp of God's people"** it would mean that, **"the camp of God's people"** is in a 'single location'. How can this be—Given we know that there will be a **'Godly Governmental Structure'** in every nation on the earth and we believe, some portion of the population will be a **'Christian Population'**. This **'surround'** concept

does not appear to fit our situation! Therefore, again there must be more to this story/event that we are not being told!

Question 2: At this point: 'During the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth' are all of "God's People" actually in one place — "camp"? This does not sound a lot like the type of government I would expect from Jesus. I would think He would have a **'full court press'** on 'Evangelism' throughout the earth. Especially for the children being born during the 1,000 years. The concept that all of **'God's people are all in one** — 'camp', again does not appear to fit our situation! Therefore, again there must be more to this story/event that we are not being told!

Second Portion: I think the last portion of this statement, "...the city He loves." provides the reader with some clarity about the first part of this verse, "...surrounding—the camp of God's people...". To me there is no question that we are now talking about the 'City of Jerusalem'. I have listed below, how I believe God provides the reader with the necessary information to interpret this verse.

Second Portion → Point One: "...the city He loves."

This seems to be a somewhat perplexing statement, given we have just stated above that 'The Government of Jesus—Led by His Saints'—will be scattered all over the earth—in every nation. There has been some discussion on → **'Exactly what city this is'?** However, based on scripture I do not think that there can be any question that it is **Jerusalem—God's Holy City and the one he Loves**, Joel, 3:17, "Then you will know that I, the Lord your God, dwell in Zion, My holy hill. Jerusalem will be holy; never again will foreigners invade her." 2 Chron. 32:19, "Then they called out in Hebrew to the people of Jerusalem who were on the wall, to terrify them and make them afraid in order to capture the city. They spoke about the God of Jerusalem as they did about the gods of other peoples of the world—the work of men's hands. King Hezekiah and the prophet Isaiah son of Amoz cried out in prayer to heaven about this. And the Lord sent an angel, who annihilated all the fighting men and the leaders and officers in the camp of the Assyrian king."

Also, this is the words of Daniel as it relates to Jerusalem, Dan. 9:19, **“O Lord, listen! O Lord, forgive! O Lord, hear and act! For your sake, O my God, do not delay, because your city (Jerusalem) and your people (Israel/Jews) bear your name.”** **This is a Key Statement**

Also, I like these words from Zechariah Chapter 12, as they speak directly to this time period: verse 3, **“On that day, when all the nations of the earth are gathered against her, I will make Jerusalem an immovable rock for all the nations.** verse 5, **“Then the leaders of Judah in their hearts, ‘The people of Jerusalem are strong, because the Lord Almighty is their God’.”** verse 8a, **“On that day the Lord will shield those who live in Jerusalem, so that the feeblest among them will be like David...”** verse 9, **“On that day I will set out to destroy all the nations that attack Jerusalem.”**

Conclusion: Therefore, it is my opinion that given all of this scripture; Jerusalem is the city that we are talking about in this verse.

Second Portion → Point Two:

However, the question still remains; **‘How can all of Gods People be in this One City’,** if they are also scattered all over the earth → **Running all of the National and Local Governments for Jesus Christ and also Being Preachers, Teachers and Evangelist for Jesus Christ (To the children being born during this period)?** I have never heard of any scholars try to explain this issue so, I will give you my opinion.

As we have said before, there will be three separate groups of saints, helping Jesus Christ govern the earth during this 1,000 years period →

- 1) The Raptured Church Saints,
- 2) The Tribulation Martyred Saints and
- 3) The Old Testament Jewish Saints.

It is my opinion that these three groups will be split into two separate groups, and they will somewhat revert back to their original locations, charge or task.

First Groups: This will be the ‘**Old Testament Jewish Saints**’, who will remain in **Israel/Jerusalem** to serve Jesus Christ as was originally intended by God. Also, I think this would fulfill the promises made by God to His people, like in Zechariah Chapter 12-14 (also, see Dan. 9:19 above) and other scriptures. Another words, the world will have to come once a year to bend the knee to the **Jesus Christ—Jewish Nation of Israel and Specifically, God’s Holy City of Jerusalem and its People.**

Second Group: This would include the ‘**Raptured Church & Tribulation Martyred Saints**’, who will spread out all over the earth ‘**To Spread the Gospel Of Jesus Christ—Evangelism**’ just like their ‘**Original Charge/Task was**’!

Note: If you think about original locations of where these three groups served God, it only makes sense that they will continue to serve → Where they had originally served, my conclusion fits → **(Israel in Israel and the Church & the Martyred Tribulation Saints—Scattered All Over the Earth)**. Just my opinion! I think another key indicator is the wording that God used in the beginning of this verse, **“...surrounding—the camp of God’s people...”**. This would be the exact wording that has been used in many Old Testament Books to describe the ‘**Nation of Israel**’, just after they came out of Egypt. **1) They were God’s People & 2) When they stopped they “camped” & 3) The “camp” was in the form of a ‘circle’ – “Surrounding”.**

I did not re-quote all of the scripture to support my opinion as we have already quoted above a lot that would support my opinion (See Book of Exodus). Also it is just keeping with the same ‘**Biblical Concept or Process Flow**’ that God started at the beginning of written scripture. However, it is still, just my opinion.

Therefore, I think we must say that at this point in time, the answer is un-known?

Verse 9 → Point Three:

“But fire came down from heaven and devoured them.”

To me I think God put these 9 words in to let the reader know exactly → **‘How this Event (The Last Rebellion) Will End on Earth—And just How Quickly &**

Sudden It Will Be'. However, I think there is more to these words than just → **'The End of the Most Evil & Veil 'CREATED BEING' That Has Ever Existed; in Heaven or on Planet Earth and his Current Followers'**. Remember the next thing to happen in Johns vision is **'The Great White Throne Judgment'**. The bible does not tell us if **'All of Creation, both Past & Present, will be Watching this Event'**. However, my personal opinion is that they will be able to see this event—as the **'Chasm—Void'** that will be created to divide the **'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem & the Lake of Burning Sulfur'** will not have been created yet. Therefore, to me there will be two separate groups of on—watchers (angelic & human) who will have a great interest in the outcome of this war as it will determine where they will spend **'Eternity'**. I will list these two groups below:

- 1) Satan & his followers, both angelic and human,(past & present) will know that from this point forward they will spend eternity separated from God and in the **'Lake of Burning Sulfur'**. I think this group will be very sad and unhappy for a very long time, actually Eternity.
- 2) God (the Trinity) and their followers, angelic and human, (past & present) will also be watching and know from this point forward that they spend eternity **WITH God-Trinity in Gods Newly Created—Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem and Free of Sin or a Sin Nature**. And I think this group will be very happy for a very long time, actually Eternity.

This process of **"...fire came down from heaven and devoured them."** Appears to be same process that God used to destroy Sodom & Gomorrah or the like the words of Rev. 19:15, **"Out of His mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations."**

Last, Based on the way I read this verse, I do not think there can be any question in anyone's mind: **'Who is the Real Power Source in Creation'**. The other point I think is worth mentioning is that this event tied in with verses 11-15 (The Great White Throne Judgment) to me, makes it very clear that **'Humans'** have two forms (body & spirit/soul) and in this battle, **God is only killing/taking the Bodies of the Humans that are part of Satan's Rebellion'**, because there **'Spirit /Soul'** **will be 'Judged at the Great White Throne Judgement'**.

Remember, ever 'being—both angelic and human that has ever been created' → was created for all of Eternity and will either → **Spend that Eternity with God or Separated from God—In Torment.**

I think the last point worth talking about is, we are not told → If this **"fire"** destroys the entire **'First Creation'** or just the area involved in this war. Nor are we told exactly when the **'First Heaven'** is destroyed. We are only told that after this event comes the **'Great White Throne Judgment'** and after that; John sees the **'New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'**. Base on the specific wording it would appear that these events will happen—very quickly and in Very Rapid Succession. Again, just my opinion.

Verse 10 →

"And the devil, who deceived them, → was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, → where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. → They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever." To me, I think God put this verse in to provide all readers/created beings with general overview of; **Exactly—How Things will End for those who → 'Rebel against God and do not accept His free gift of Salvation, through the Shed Blood of Jesus Christ'**. However, for some reason, God only spells out the names of the three most anti—god beings that have ever lived. I assume as an example of all of those who, fit into this group?

Verse 10 → **Point One: "And the devil, who deceived them..."**

In the first part of these words → God through Johns words, simply defines for the reader exactly who it is that He/God is speaking about in this section, **"And the devil..."** (Satan, dragon, serpent, beast).

Next, God through Johns words makes it very clear → **Exactly What Sin** the **"devil"** had committed, (against God and Man) and it was **"...who deceived them..."**, which was the sin of **'deception'** or better known as **lying** and it was to—**all the humans of the earth**. I think this should sound very familiar to those who have read very much of the Bible, as Satan has used this same tool (**deception—lying**) since the creation of the world to cause humans to be

separated from God—remember the lie/deception Satan used to lure Eve & Adam in to ‘Rebelling Against God’ and he has never stopped since that time.

Verse 10 → Point Two: “...was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur...”

In the Book of Matthew, Jesus tries to provide for men, what I believe is a basic description of the place that our verse is talking about and the process through which ‘**rebellious beings**’ will get there; **‘The Lake of Burning Sulfur’**, Matt. 25:41, **“then he will say to those on His left, ‘Depart from Me , you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.”** and Matt. 13:40-42, **“As the weeds are pulled up and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of the age. The Son of man will send out His angels, and they will weed out His kingdom of everything that causes sin and all who do evil. They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”**

Also, it is my opinion that God does not focus a great deal of ‘**His Word—the Bible**’ on describing in detail ‘**The Lake of Burning Sulfur**’ and all of its horrors. It appears to me that God dedicated most of ‘**His, Word-Bible**’ on → **How to be Saved → Redemption → How to Live a Godly Life → And How to say in Gods Will →** and **‘Avoid The Lake of Burning Sulfur, Altogether’**. However, we do know that based on scripture, those who end up in ‘**The Lake of Burning Sulfur**’ will be **Separated from God and All of His Goodness for all of Eternity.**

However, the Bible is clear that ‘**Un-Repented Rebellion Brings Judgment**’ and the ‘**End Results**’ will be ‘**The Lake of Burning Sulfur**’. It appears to me that this is the point in time, in the life/existence of Satan where, → He has been judged for the last time by God and found ‘**Un-Repentant and Totally Sin-Filled**’, therefore, he will be condemned to the ‘**Lake of Burning Sulfur**’ for Eternity.

Last, I think there are three points made by God in this statement, which are as follows:

- 1) God’s word, the Bible, is consistent, as He-God told all of His creation what would happen if they rebelled.

- a) We are not exactly how God communicated this rule to the angels?
However, we know that Satan and the angels that followed him, did rebel against God, see Rev. 12:7-9.
- 2) Angelic being are treated no different than humans if they rebel, so all of humanity should take note of these words and expect the same treatment if they rebel, meaning outside of Jesus.
- 3) All saved humans and loyal angelic being should also take note of **'Gods Keeping His Promise to His Angels & Saints'**.

Details on Forth Topic → The Great White Throne Judgment:

SPECIAL NOTE BEFORE WE BEGIN: Before we begin I would like to say that these 5 verse encompass many Biblical Concepts and is — very simple to read but, to me, Very Complicated to Adequately Explain. Having said that, just be aware that I will jump around a lot in scripture and seem to repeat myself a lot. Therefore, if you are having a hard time following me – stop me and ask a question/explain. Last, keep in mind that at the end of the GWTJ, it will be the last moments of **'The First Creation'** as we know it! **(Note:** I believe that when God says He/God destroys the **'First Creation'** (Rev. 21:1) this means that He/God will **'Un-create both the Original Heaven and Earth'**, as we presently know them. Then it appears that in Revelation Chapters 21 & 22, God makes the following statement, **"I am making everything new."** Again, I am not exactly sure how all of this will work but it appears that: what will be created, will be → **'Nothing That Currently Exist'**. As for the **'human & angelic beings'** that were created in the first creation, it appears the **'Saved Humans & the Angels that Followed God'** will be transformed into a **'New Being, That Has No Sin Nor Has the Ability to Sin'**. As for the **'unsaved humans & angels that rebelled'** we are not told if they will be changed in any way, only that they will be separated from God and tormented for eternity.

Fourth Topic in Chapter 20:

Verses 11-15 → 'Describes the Great White Throne Judgment by God'

Again, this **'Forth Topic' in this Chapter**, → **'Describes the Great White Throne Judgment by God'** and is covered in Rev. 20:11-15. However, before we begin our detailed study of these five verses, I think it is worth reading them and then setting back and **'Really Looking at What They are Saying—Especially Given from this point forward all → unsaved beings, both angelic and human, will → NEVER SEE OR FEEL ANYTHING Again – EXCEPT → 'THE LAKE OF BURNING SULFUR FOR ALL ETERNITY'**. As I have said many times before; **this will truly be a very sad day for the unsaved** and **'A Truly Great Day for All the Saved Being of God's First Creation'**.

Also, based on the sequential order of scripture, I believe this will be the **'Last Event to Happen → In the Old Creation—both Heaven & Earth'**. Remember, Revelation Chapter 21 opens with these words, **"Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, → for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away..."**

I will break these verse down into what I believe to be there basic sub-sets, which should make them easier to understand, even though we may have to cover much of the entire Bible.

Rev. 20:11-15,

Rev. Verse, 11: "Then I saw a great white throne → and Him who was seated on it. → The earth and sky fled from His presence, and → there was no place for them. (could be talking about the un-creating of the first heaven and earth)

Rev. Verses 12a: "And I saw the dead, → great and small, standing before the throne..."

Rev. 12b: "...and books (more than one) were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life."

Rev. 12c: "The dead were judged according to what they had done → as recorded in the books."

Rev. 13: “The sea gave up the dead that were in it, → and Death & Hades gave up the dead that were in them, → and each person was judged according to what he had done.”

Rev. 14a: “Then Death & Hades were thrown into the lake of fire.

Rev. 14b: “The Lake of Fire is the second death.”

Rev. 15: “If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”

Before we begin our detailed study of these (5) verses, I think we need to discuss some of the key supporting biblical elements upon which scholars base their views, like: ‘Who exactly it is , that we are talking about within these verses → First the Judge & Second the Ones Being Judged and Third Other Supporting Biblical Doctrines. I will explain some of these doctrines below and then we can start our study of these 5 verses.

Doctrine Analysis:

QUESTION ONE: Who is it that is “seated” on the ‘throne’? (This appears to be just one **Being/God**)

However, scholars in the past have presented two primary views of; Who they believe is ‘seated’ on the ‘Throne’.

- 1) God the Father, or
- 2) Jesus, the Son,

VIEW ONE—God the Father: The scholars who believe this view, focus on verses like Romans 14:10-12, “You then, why do you judge your brothers? Or why do you look down on your brother? For we will all stand before God’s judgment seat. It is written: ‘As surely as I live, says the Lord, Every knee will bow before Me; every tongue will confess to God.’ Do then, each of us will give an account of himself to God.” Also, Isa. 45:23-25, “Turn to me and be saved, all you ends of the earth; for I am God and there is no other. By Myself I have

sworn, My mouth has uttered in all integrity a word that will not be revoked; Before Me every knee will bow; by me every tongue will swear. They will say of me, 'On the Lord alone are righteousness and strength.' All who have raged against Him will come to Him and be put to shame. But in the Lord all the descendants of Israel will be found righteous and will exult."

VIEW TWO—Jesus, God the Son: The scholars who believe in this view, focus on verses like John, 5:22, "Moreover, the Father judges no one, but entrusts all judgment to the Son..." and John 5:27-29, "And He (God the Father) has given Him (The Son) authority to judge because He is the Son of Man. Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear His voice and come out—those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned."

My Opinion:

Based on my understanding of many other scriptures it is my opinion that it is **'God the Father'** who is setting on the throne during this **'Court/Judicial Proceeding'**. I base my opinion on; How I see this **'Specific Proceeding Taking Place and Who is Playing → WHAT PART'**. Keep in mind that the setting of this process, appears to that of a legal proceeding.

NOTE: Also, remember, since the beginning of human creation; God has been playing up to four separate parts → **'The Trinity—(all three combined)'** → **'God the Father'** → **'God the Son—Jesus the Christ'** → and **God The Holy Spirit'**. It appears to me that God used all of these separate forms → To keep **His Master Plan on Track for His Human Creation!**

The Timeline of Jesus:

First Period: It appears that time, as we know it, began at the beginning of creation; that is the visible creation, and it was created by the **"trinity"**. This entire process included the creation of the visible creation and all living beings—man, Gen. 1:26, **Then God said, 'Let US (trinity) make man in OUR (trinity)**

image, on OUR (trinity) likeness...”. All of this activity would have included the **‘Being We Call → JESUS’**.

Second Period: During the time period between creation and the birth of Jesus on earth there have been many scholars who believe that Jesus has made Himself know to humanity through many events like **‘The Fourth Person/Being in the Furnace with Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego’**.

Third Period: This period covers the time when Jesus, actually walked the earth as a **‘God—man’** and lived among the people as man. This period is called, **‘The New Testament Period or the Time of the Church on Earth’**. During this period, **God the Father** again played the part of the **‘Senior Portion of the Trinity—Father’** and Jesus, the God-man, played the part of the **‘Subservient Son—Obeying & Following the Will of the Father’**. I will explain, what I think are the key steps in this process:

- 1) As human time passed, (per God’s master Plan for Creation), **‘Jesus the Son’** was needed to play the **‘Subservient—Sacrificial Lamb’**.
- 2) Because of, **His death, resurrection and ascension**, all men, both past & present, would be able to be reconciled to God by, **‘Accepting Jesus as their Savior’**.
- 3) Also, after **His death, resurrection and ascension**; He then moved to heaven where He welcomed all saints as they died at the **(bema/rewards seat of Jesus)** and **‘Sets at the Right Hand of God the Father’**.
- 4) At the ascension of Jesus, God the Father sends the **‘Holy Spirit’** to the world to: **1) Convict Everyone Who is Willing, 2) Actually in-well everyone who is saved, 3) Be the Protector of the Church of Jesus Christ.**
- 5) **When God the Father decides the time has come; He/God will send Jesus Christ to Raptures His Church to Heaven.**
- 6) Then ~ 7 years late—Jesus Christ will Return to Earth with **‘All of His Raptured Saints + the Martyred Tribulation Saints + All of the Jewish/Israel Saints’** and **Incarcerate Satan** for 1,000 years and destroy/physically kill the people of his armies and rules earth as a **‘Lion’** for 1,000 years.

- 7) The next thing to happen is, Satan will be released (after the 1,000 year reign of Jesus on earth) and once again deceives many of the people of the earth and they again will try to destroy Jesus and Gods People, **“But fire came down from heaven and devoured them.”** Rev. 20: 9b and based on the wording of this verse it appears that the **‘fire’** is form **God the Father**. (Some scholars believe that this **“fire”** will destroy the **‘old heaven and earth’**).
- 8) We are now at the point in time, that we call the **‘Great White Throne Judgement’**, (which is the scripture that we are talking about) and based on my understanding of scripture → Jesus plays the part of the **‘Mediator’** for the **‘Saints During This Court—Judicial—Legal Proceeding’**, Rev. 20:11, **“Then I saw a great white throne...”** (the word **‘throne’** indicates some type of, a judgment or legal process) that would take place at the very end of the **‘First Creation’**. 1 Tim. 2:5, **“For there is one God and one mediator between God and men the man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself as a ransom for all men...”** Heb. 9:15, **“How much more then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself unblemished to God, cleanse our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God! For this reason Christ is the mediator of a new covenant, that those who are called may receive the promised eternal inheritance...”**
- 9) Therefore, it is my opinion that during the **‘Great White Throne Judgement’** → **God the Father Plays the Part of Judge.**

Note: All so always keep in mind when reading the book of Revelation; **‘WHY’** the Book of Revelation was written, Rev. 1:1, **“The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave Him to show His servants what must soon take place.”**

Also, I did not mention the part that the **‘Holy Spirit Played During this Period’**, as it relates to humanity, which, I think was two-fold, however, first I will talk about the Old Testament Period.

First, The Role of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament Period:

I do not think there is any question that the **Holy Spirit** played a variety of functions in the Old Testament Period:

ONE: → Part of Creation, Gen. 1:2, **“Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the water.”** Also, Gen. 1:26, **Then God said, ‘Let US (trinity) make man in OUR (trinity) image, on OUR (trinity) likeness...’**. All of this activity would have included the **‘Being We Call → The Holy Spirit’**.

TWO → Teacher, Neh. 9:20, **“You gave your good spirit to instruct them.”** And verse 30, **“For many years you were patient with them. By Your Spirit You admonished them through Your prophets.”** also I like Job 32:8, **“But it is the spirit in a man, the breath of the Almighty, that gives him understanding.”** And Psalm 143:10, **“Teach me to do Your will, for You are my God; may Your good Spirit lead me on level ground.”**

THREE → Manifestation of God’s Presence with Men, (This is David talking to God about his sins), Psalm 51:11, **“Do not cast me from your presence or take your Holy Spirit from me.”** Psalm 139:7, **“Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence?”** also, I like this one, Haggai, 2:4-5, **“But now be strong, O Zerubbabel, declares the Lord. ‘Be, strong, O Joshua son of Jehozadak, the high priest. Be strong, all you people of the land’, declares the Lord, ‘and work. For I am with you’, declares the Lord Almighty. This is what I covenanted with you when you came out of Egypt. And MY SPIRIT remains among you. Do not fear.”**

FOUR → The Holy Spirit, can also ‘Empower Specific People—to Accomplish God’s Will/Plan’:

- 1) **Samson**, Judges 14:6, **“The Spirit of the Lord came upon him in power do that he tore the lion apart with his bare hands as he might have torn a young goat.”**

- 2) **Moses & the Seventy Elders of Israel**, Numbers 11:17, **“I will come down and speak with you there, and I will take of the spirit that is on you and put the spirit on them. They will help you carry the burden of the people so that you will not have to carry it alone.”**
- 3) **Gideon**, Judges 6:34, **“Then the Spirit of the Lord came upon Gideon, and he blew a trumpet, summoning the Abiezrites to follow him.”**
- 4) **David**, 1 Chronicles 28:12, **“He (David) gave him (Solomon) the plans of all that the Spirit had put in his mind for the court of the temple of the Lord and all the surrounding rooms...”**

NOTE: There are many scholars that believe that based on all of these scriptures it would appear that once the ‘**Holy Spirit**’ helped the person accomplish, the specific task that God required, the Holy Spirit would ‘**leave**’ the person, as it relates to the ‘**Specific Task Being Describes**’; I think this is correct. However, I do not think this is correct, in terms of the ‘**Holy Spirit**’ leaving the person ‘**Completely**’, as I believe that the ‘**Calling of God—To Live by Faith in God (Trinity)—During this ‘Pre-Christ Time Period’** is still accomplished by the ‘**Holy Spirit**’. Now we have the ‘**Words of Jesus in the New Testament**’ that make it clear that the Holy Spirit will remain within ‘**All Saved People**’ while they are on this earth, John 14:16, **“And I will ask My Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever—the Spirit of truth.”** My impression of the God that I know and the scripture that I have read, is that it would lead me to believe that; He/God, does not ever leave ‘**His**’ → **whatever type of created being that has declared that they are his—defenseless – and man by himself is defenseless against--Satan**).

I think the connectivity of this process is foretold in Isaiah 42:1, **“Here is My servant, whom I up-hold, My chosen one in whom I delight; I will put My Spirit on Him and he will bring justice to the nations.”** It appears to me that this prophecy was completed in Luke 3:22, **“When all the people were baptized, Jesus was baptized too. And as he was praying, heaven was opened and the Holy Spirit descended in Him in bodily form like a dove. And a voice came from heaven: ‘You are My Son, whom I love; with You I am well pleased’.**

Again, the Holy Spirit has functioned in different roles at different points in time, yet, always as the → **'Third Person of the Trinity and His Nature is Always the same—because He is All God'**. This same Spirit that was involved in the creation of the universe, and came upon Jesus the God-man; now lives within all of those who follow God in both the **Old Testament and New Testament Period**. Again, all Humans that have served God in the Old Testament and Christians today have enjoyed the daily benefits of a personal relationship with God through the presence of the Holy Spirit. The Spirit who strengthened Samson and caused David to dance in the Old Testament; has empowered all Old Testament Saints & New Testament Christians to be filled with that same joy every day because of their relationship with **God/Jesus/Holy Spirit** **'AND'** the assurance of where you will spend eternity. Zechariah 4:6, **"So he said to me, 'This is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel: Not by might, nor power, but by My Spirit', says the Lord Almighty."** Hope this helps to better understand the **'Part the Holy Spirit Played in the History of Humanity'** → And again, this is just my opinion!

Second, Role of the Holy Spirit in the New Testament Period:

During the **'Post—Christ Period the Holy Spirit'** will have many of the same duties as in the **Old Testament Period**, but also, **'Two Unique & Separate Functions, as it Relates to the Church':**

First Function: (Somewhat of a repeat) Again, the **'Calling of God'**, except this time it was to **'To Live by Faith in Jesus Christ (Repent and be Saved) — The One and Only Son of God** → **Who died for the sins of the world and descended into hell, and was raised from the dead and ascended to heaven and sits at the right hand of God the Father.** 1 Corinthians 12:13, **"For we were all baptized by one Spirit into one body—whether Jews or Greeks, slave or free—and were given the one Spirit to drink."** John 16:7-8, **"But I tell you the truth; It is for your good that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Counselor (Holy Spirit) will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him (Holy Spirit) to you. When he (Holy Spirit) comes, He will convict the world of guilt in regard to sin and**

righteousness and judgment...” John 16:12-15, “I have much more to say to you, more than you can now bear. But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on His own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come. He will bring glory to me by taking from what is Mine and making it known to you. All that belongs to the Father is Mine. That is why I said the Spirit will take from what is Mine and make it known to you.” John 15:26-27, “When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, He will testify about Me. But you also must testify, for have been with me from the beginning.” 1 Cor. 2:6-16, “We do, however, speak a message of wisdom among the mature, but not the wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing. No, speak of God’s secret wisdom, a wisdom (mystery) that has been hidden and that God destined for our glory before time began. None of the rulers of this age understood it, for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. However, as it is written, ‘No eye has seen, no mind has conceived what God has prepared for those who love Him’—but God has revealed it to us by His Spirit. For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the man’s spirit within him? In the same way no one knows the thoughts of God except the Spirit of God. We have not received the spirit of the world but the Spirit who is from God, that we may understand what God has freely given to us. This is what we speak, not in words thought us by human wisdom but in words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words. The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned. The spiritual man makes judgments (understanding) about things, but he himself is not subject to any man’s judgment. ‘For who knows the mind of the Lord that he may instruct Him?’ But we have the mind of Christ.”

It is my opinion that this function will continue during the ‘Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth’ as well as, ‘The Period when Satan is released: at the end of Christ Millennial Reign or just after the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ’ (exact timing unknown).

Second Function: The **'Protector of the Church of Jesus Christ'**. Again, this function will last from **'Pentecost to the Rapture of the Church'** → Primarily because the church will be in heaven and then directly protected by the Trinity, during the **'Seven Year Tribulation Period'**. Also, it appears this will not be the case (needed) during the Millennial Reign of Jesus on earth as Jesus will be the protector of the Saints.)

At Pentecost: The Holy Spirit Became the → **PHYSICAL & SPIRITUAL** → **Protecting Power of the Church of Jesus Christ on Earth** → Acts 1:4, **"On one occasion, while he was eating with them, He gave them this command, 'Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift My Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit'."** Acts 1:8, **"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be My witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."** Luke, 24:49, **"I am going to send you what My Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with the power on high."** 2 Thess. 2:5-7, **"Don't you remember that when I was with you that I used to tell you these things. And now you know what (Holy Spirit) is holding him back, so that he may be revealed at the proper time. For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who is holding it back will continue to do so till He (Holy Spirit) is taken out of the way."**

Conclusion:

Again, based on all of this scripture, I believe that → **God the Father is the Judge and Jesus is the Mediator between Man and God at the 'Great white Throne Judgment'**, therefore:

When God the Judge → **Looks at a Saint & his Sins** → **All He/God the Judge sees is** → **The 'Righteousness of Jesus' (Mediator) and Not Mans Sins'**.

Heb. 9:15, **"How much more then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself unblemished to God, cleanse our consciences**

from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God! For this reason Christ is the mediator of a new covenant, that those who are called may receive the promised eternal inheritance...” Again, just my opinion, based on my interpretation of scripture.

QUESTION TWO: Who is it that will be **‘Judged at the Great White Throne Judgment’**? Bible scholars have developed many views on; **‘Exactly Who it is Being Talked About in these Verses’**, I will present the primary views on this question and you can make up your mind, as follows:

View 1—It Will Be Limited to → ‘All Unsaved People’, Who Have Ever Lived:

The people who follow this view, believe that the only people involved in this event will be **‘All of the Un-Saved People Who Have Ever Lived—as All Saved people will Have Already Been Rewarded/Judged When They Physically Died and Went to the Bema Seat of Jesus’**. However, much of the scripture I quoted in **‘Question One’** I think disproves this assumption.

Also, we will need to discuss this same subject in **‘View 2’** below, so rather than repeat much of the same scripture twice I will just provide two verses: Rev. 20:12, **“And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were open.”** & Rev. 20:13, **“The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death & Hades gave up the dead that that were in them, and each person was judged according to what he had done.”** Again, the people that support this view believe that these verses are just talking about **‘Un-Saved People’**, however, these people do not provide scripture or biblical concepts that support their view. Again, my interpretation of these verses is that they clearly state/mean → **‘ALL the People Who Have Ever Lived and Died’**. Again, just my opinion, read for yourself.

View 2 – ‘All Of The People Who Have Ever Lived—Saved & Unsaved’:

To me there are many biblical concepts involved within the **‘Second View’**; I will try to outline some of the more important, that I believe will provide us with the basic understanding that is required to analyze this view, as follows:

First Biblical Concept → The Scriptural Meaning of Death:

Many scholars and people in general have put forward many views on; **'How to Interpret Death or What Does Death Mean or What Happens to a Human at Death?'** Some of these are secular, some are, what I would call semi-scriptural, however, I put this one together which I like best. Again, study and make up your own mind.

My Definition of Death:

I believe that we need to first look at; **'What is Life'**? As far as I can tell this is Gods first record/words of when **'Life was Created'** and was in Gen. 2:7, NIV, **"And the Lord God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being."**

I like the Greek Translator better, **"And Jehovah God formed man out of the dust from the ground, and blew into his nostrils the BREATH OF LIFE; and man became a LIVING SOUL."** To me the Greek Translator is very specific that **'During this Process by God'** both forms/aspects of a man/human were created → **'A Physical Being & A Spiritual Being'**. Also, keep in mind that this was a **'Key Element of Gods Master Plan for Humanity'** and His/Gods way of Fooling Satan.

Note: There is no mention of this same type of process when Eve was created, however, the way the scripture records this event it appears that the **'Breath of Life & a Living Soul'** was passed through Adam to Eve in his/Adams **"rib"**, or **'Living and Breathing Human Tissue'**. Again, just my opinion! Gen. 2:21, **"So the Lord God caused man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, He/God took one the man's ribs and closed up the place with flesh. Then the Lord made the woman from the rib, He/God had taken out of the man. And He brought her to the man."**

Conclusion:

Therefore, it is my opinion that **'Physical Death Occurs – When a Human Stops BREATHING'**, → **Which is Exactly the Opposite Way That God**

Started Life With In All Humans'. I think the other way to say this would be → **'To Stop Breathing Would Be The Absence of Life'**. Also, I am sure that this definition will hold true for both **'Saved & Unsaved'** people who are dead. Also, keep in mind when thinking about; How to define **'Death'**, we are talking about the **'Humans at the Great White Throne Judgement'**, → **'All of which will be physically dead at this Point in Time'**. **"And I saw the dead...The dead were judged...The sea gave up the dead...death & Hades gave up the dead..."** Again, the definition appears to be straight forward to me but you need to read and make up your own mind.

Second Biblical Concept → **Away from the Body is to be With the Lord:**

Step One: However, based on scripture this biblical concept only appears to hold true for saved people (**meaning when people belonging to God, Old or New Testament, die their spirit & body are separated and there spirit is instantly with God in heaven—Meaning the Heavenly side of: OT-Sheol & NT Hades).** See section on death above for additional details. Again, I believe that this concept applies to both Old & New Testament Saints, however, it appears that each one of these two groups of saints will go through a different process; depending on if we are talking about **'Pre-Christ or Post-Christ'**. However, the end results, I believe will be the same.

Example: Old Testament, Gen. 5: 24, **"Enoch walked with God, then he was no more, because God took him away."** Proverbs 14:32, **"When calamity comes, the wicked are brought down, but even in death the righteous have a refuge."**

Example: New Testament, 2 Cor. 5:8, **"We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord."** Phil. 1:23-24, **"I am torn between the two: I desire to depart and be with Christ, which is better by far; but it is more necessary for you that I remain in the**

body.” There are many more verses in each testament , to support this concept but I have limited my quotes to two each.

Step Two: I think the next step is a little more complicated and maybe even; **‘Not Even Completely Definable by Humans’**. However, I will give you my opinion— and then you need to read and make up your own mind. Again, we know for sure that ***‘to be absent of the body is to be with God’*** (Trinity), but, **which part of heaven and → for what purpose?**

Question One—Which Part of Heaven:

Pre-Church Period: It appears to me that in the **‘Pre-Church Period’**, which would be from Adam to Pentecost → all Saved people would go straight to **‘The Heavenly Portion of Sheol’** and be **‘comforted/paradise’** awaiting the **‘Great White Throne Judgment’**. They would be allowed to go to **‘The Heaven Side of Sheol’** because of the **“credit”** God provided them, *(awaiting the birth, perfect life, death, resurrection and ascension of Jesus)*. The life of Abraham would be a good example of: **Exactly How this Would Work;** Gen. 15:6, **“Abram believed the Lord, and He/God credited it to him as righteousness.”** (This same concept is repeated in Romans 4:3) also, Luke 16:22a, **“The time came when the beggar died (saved person) and the angels carried him to Abrahams side.”** (also see 25b, **“...but now he (Lazarus) is comforted HERE...”** (I think this would be the case for all **Pre-Pentecost Period Saints**)

Question Two—For What Purpose:

This same story told by Jesus, in Luke, about Abraham, also defines for us where **‘Unsaved People’** went when they died, Luke 16:22b-23, **“The rich man also died and was buried. In Hell (Hades), where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side.”** The rich man was in a place of **‘torment’**, whereas, Lazarus was with **Abraham—in heaven/paradise**. Jesus also provided us with one more piece of information within this parable. Again, many if not most scholars believe that the place being described in Luke Chapter 16, by Jesus: Where Abraham/Lazarus and the rich man went are the same overall place, but divided by a void. This place was called **‘Sheol’** in the Old Testament and

Hades in the New Testament. They use Luke 16: 26 to support their view, **“And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us.”** Again, one place—holding compartment → divided by a **“chasm—void”** that cannot be breached, with both groups awaiting the ‘Great White Throne Judgement’.

Pentecost to the Rapture & Then To The End of the Seven Year Tribulation Period:

Remember, we are talking about the specific **Biblical Concept** → **‘Away from the Body is to be With the Lord’**. During this specific period of time the process or steps that a saved person will go through is different than the ‘Pre-Pentecost Period’, I will explain. I will also speak to the issue of the **‘Un-Saved—being away from the body and their location’** during this same period.

Saved People → All saved people who die during this period (Pentecost – End of the Tribulation) will instantly go to heaven, and the first stop will be the **‘Bema Seat of Jesus’**. The purpose of the stop will be to receive the rewards for their **‘Godly Works/Crowns & Saved Peoples Un-Godly Works’** while they were on this earth. 2 Cor. 5:10, **“For we must all appear before the judgement (bema) seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.”** Also, Romans 14:10b, **“For we will all stand before Christ/God’s judgment (bema) seat.”** A parable by Jesus which I think shows the three components → salvation – works & rewards, 1 Cor. 3:10-15, **“By the grace God has given Me, I laid a foundation as an expert builder, and someone else is building on it. But each one should be careful how he builds. For no one can lay any foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ. If any man builds on this foundation using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, or straw, his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man’s works. If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. → If it is burned up,**

he will suffer loss; → he himself will be save, but as one escaping through the flames.” Eph. 6:7-8, “Serve wholeheartedly, as if you were serving the Lord, not men, because you know that the Lord will reward everyone for whatever good he does, whether he is slave or free.” → This concept has been defined a ‘The Doctrine of Rewards’.

Un-Saved People → Just like in the Old Testament, all New Testament unsaved people who die will be sent to the lower side of, what is called **‘Hades’** in the New Testament (Old Testament=Sheol), both of which means – this is the beginning of being separated from God for eternity. (Definition: Hades; The Greek word used to denote the deity of the underworld and abode of the dead. The New Testament use of Hades builds on its Hebrew parallel, Sheol, which was the preferred translation in the Septuagint.) Most scholars believe that this biblical concept is a secondary meaning to the words in 1 Peter 3:18-22. *And, again for the unsaved in the New Testament Period, the word Hades is the same places as Sheol in the Old Testament → Meaning Separated from God!*

Note: The Reason Jesus, Has the Authority to Rules Over Both the Saved & Un-Saved in Both, Life and Death:

I am going to list some scripture that I think explains the process flow that God used to put Jesus in charge of both the Saved & Unsavaed. **NOTE:** To me God did this so that all men would be able to reconcile themselves to HIM/God, as well as, **‘Have No Excuse When They Stand Before Him/God at the Great White Throne Judgement’**.

Jesus lived a sinless life, 1Peter, 2:22, “he committed no sin, and no deceit was found in His mouth.” 1 John 3:5, “But you know that he appeared so that He might take away our sins. And in Him is no sin.”

Jesus died for the sins of the world (Past and Present), 1 John, 2:2 “He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not only for our sins but also for the sins of the whole world.” 1 Peter, 3:18, “For Christ died once for sins once for all, the

righteous for the unrighteous, to bring them to God.” Romans 6:10, “The death He died, He died to sin once for all; but the life he lives, He lives to God.”

Jesus died and took the sins of the world into Hell/Hades/Sheol/Prison, 1 Peter, 3:18-20a, “For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also He went and preached to the spirits in prison who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built.”

Jesus is now in charge of everything, both the dead & living—Heaven & Earth, by God the Father, Romans 14:9, “For this very reason, Christ died and returned to life so that He might be Lord of both the dead and the living.”

2 Tim. 1:9b-10, This grace was given to us in Christ Jesus before the beginning of time, but it has now been revealed through the appearing of our Savior, Christ Jesus, who has destroyed death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. Eph. 1:20-23, “That power is like the working of His mighty strength, which He exerted in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly realms, far above all rule and authority, power and dominion, and ever title that can be given, not only in the present age but also in the one to come. And God placed all things under His feet and appointed Him to be head over everything for the church, which is His body, the fullness of Him who fills everything in every way.” And Heb. 2:14, “Since the children have flesh and blood, He too shared in their humanity so that by His death He might destroy him who holds the power of death—that is, the devil—and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.”

Third Biblical Concept → At This Point in Time, (Great White Throne Judgement) How Does God Determine → When You Die, If You Go To Heaven or the Lower Side of Sheol/Hades/Hell:

The answer seems obvious: If you are Saved you will go to Heaven and if you are Un-saved, you will go to → **'The Lake of Burning Sulfur'**, which would normally be the correct answer but: **'Not the Complete Answer for the Process in Our Verse'**. Remember, God through John's words is providing us with a mental picture of a **'Legal Proceeding'**, therefore, **'The Judge/God the Father'** must be presented with, **'The Evidence'** or some type of **'Documentation About the Guilt or Innocence, of Each Person—Who Has Ever Lived'**. At this point the **'Evidence'**, This documentation has been collected since the creation of the world, until the last **Human Dies—at the End of the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth**, will be presented to the **'Judge'** and 'each person will be given a chance to speak on their own behalf', about the **'evidence'**. This **'Evidence'** will come from the books in heaven that have recorded everything each individual did or thought during our life on earth, Rev. 20:12b, **"...and books were opened. Another book was opened, which was the book of Life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books."**

At this point: the presenting of the **'Evidence'**, is where the process splits into two specific paths:

The Path for Saved People:

If you are, what we have been calling **'a saved person'**, after the presenting of the evidence → **(which would have condemned this person to the → Lake of Burning Sulfur for ALL of ETERNITY)** → **'Our Legal Counsel/Mediator—Jesus Christ'**, will step before the **'Judge'** and say: **'All of this Evidence is Inadmissible, because this 'SOUL/Spirit' is Protected from Prosecution because Their name is Written in the Lambs Book of Life'**. Remember the **'books'** that we were talking about above in Rev, 20:12b, that recorded all of our actions and thoughts while we were on this earth are actually, what we would call a **'Double Edged Sword'**. Again, everyone's name is written in the books (plural) that record all of our actions &

thoughts while we were on this earth, however only **'Saved Peoples Names are Written in the 'Lambs Book of Life'**. The question is → What exactly does it mean if your name is written in the **'Lambs Book of Life'**?

First → Your **'Spirit/Soul'** will be admitted into heaven (upper part of Sheol & Hades) when you die,

Second → **'Your Spirit/Soul is PROTECTED FROM PROSECUTION, for the Sins That You Have Committed — BY THE BLOOD OF JESUS CHRIT'**, when you stand before **'God the Father—the Judge'**, at the **'Great White Throne Judgment'**. Remember this would hold true for both **'Old & New Testament Saints'**, because the **'Redemptive—Spiritual Explosion of Jesus—Resurrection'**, went back to Adam and forward to the last person saved before the end of the **Millennial Reign of Jesus**.

Scripture Reference—Old Testament:

Dan. 12:1, **"At that time Michael the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be a time of distress such as had not happened from the beginning of the nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the Book—will be delivered"**

Psalms 69:28, **"May they be blotted out of the Book of Life and not be listed with the righteous."**

Exodus 32:31-33, **"So Moses went back to the Lord and said, 'O what a great sin these people have committed! They have made themselves gods of gold. But now, please forgive their sin—but if not, then blot me out of the book you have written'."**

Scripture References—New Testament:

Luke 10:20, **"However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven."**

Phil. 4:3, “Yes, and I ask you, loyal yokefellows, help these women who have contended at my side in the cause of the gospel, along with Clements and the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life.”

Rev. 3:5, “He who overcomes, will like them, be dressed in white. I will never erase his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before My Father and His angels.”

The Path for Un-Saved People:

The second group of people who will have to stand before the **‘Judge—God’** at this proceeding, **‘The Great White Throne Judgement’** will be the people who did not **‘Accept Gods FREE GIFT of ‘Salvation’** while they were living on this earth and **rejected Jesus Christ as their savior**, therefore, **‘Their Names Will Not Be Written in the Lambs Book of Life’**. I will list some of the scriptures in the **‘Bible that, State How This Works’**.

Scripture References—If Your Name is Not Written in the ‘Books’:

Rev. 20:15, “If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”

Rev. 13:8, “All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world.”

Rev. 17:8, “The beast, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss and go to his destruction. The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.”

Rev. 21:27, “Nothing impure will ever enter it, (New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem) nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life.”

Continued Discussion of Fourth Topic of → Rev. 20:11-15,

I am not sure why God wrote these verses in the chronological order that He did, because they are not grouped by ‘Subject Order’. Therefore, I will re-write them in ‘Subject Order’ to make it easier to discuss. I will also begin each group by what I believe is the primary topic.

FIRST SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → The Throne, The Judge & Physical Earthly Creation:

Rev. Verse, 11a: “Then I saw a great white throne → and Him who was seated on it. →

Rev. Verse, 11b, The earth and sky fled from His presence, and → there was no place for them.

SECOND SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → The Ones Being Judged:

Rev. Verses 12a: “And I saw the dead, → great and small, standing before the throne...”

Rev. 13a: “The sea gave up the dead that were in it, →

Rev. 13b: and Death & Hades gave up the dead that were in them, →

THIRD SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → The Documentation/Evidence Being Presented:

Rev. 12b: “...and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life.”

Rev. 12c: “The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books.”

Rev. 13c: "...and each person was judged according to what he had done."

FOURTH SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → Sentencing:

Rev. 14a: "Then Death & Hades were thrown into the lake of fire."

Rev. 14b: "The Lake of Fire is the second death."

Rev. 15: "If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."

Now, I will begin our detailed study; starting with our first topic and then move to the next topic as they appear to flow from **Judge to Sentencing**.

FIRST SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, →The Throne: The Judge & Physical Earthly Creation:

Rev. Verse, 11a: "Then I saw a great white throne → and Him who was seated on it." → As we stated in our analysis above, I believe that the one seated on the throne is **'God the Father'**, however, many others believe this to be **'Jesus Christ'**, which I believe would mean that Jesus Christ would have to play the part of **'Judge'**, as well as, **'Mediator'** in this one **'Court Room Scene'**, which does not appear to me to fit with all of the scripture that we quoted above. Again, this is not how I interpret this scripture/event, based on the New Testament.

Therefore, read and make up your own mind.

However, before we leave this section I would like to quote you one more scripture passage, Romans 2:5-11, **But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for the day of God's wrath, → when His righteous judgment will be revealed. God 'will give to each person according to what he has done'. To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, He will give eternal life. But to those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil; first for the Jew, then for the Gentile; but glory, honor and peace for everyone who does good; first for the Jew , then for**

the Gentile. For God does not show favoritism. → again read and make up your own mind.

Next Verse In: The Throne: The Judge & Physical Earthly Creation:

Rev. Verse, 11b, The earth and sky fled from His presence, and → **there was no place for them.** → This portion of verse 11 seems to be out of place given this is basically a **'Judgment Scene'** and really does not appear to have anything to do with our overall topic – **'Judging Humanity'**. However, that is not the case, → These words are also part of **'Gods Judgment—Except this Time It is on, What We Would Call, Physical Creation/Earth'**. Remember back in Genesis, when man sinned and separated himself from God, God also **'cursed'** the earth because of this event, Gen. 3:17, **"To Adam, He said, 'Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, 'You must not eat of it', 'Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life'."** And now, God is delivering His Judgment on His **'Physical Creation'**. I think this also points to the fact that God is **'Un-Creating—Destroying'** anything that has the **'taint of sin'** on it from, **'ALL His Previous Creations'**. Also, this would mean the sequential order of events is correct, in terms of the order in which Revelation was written.

First Event: Seven Year Tribulation Period

Second Event: Second Coming of Jesus to Destroy Satan & his

Third Event: Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth

Fourth Event: Final Battle with Satan

Fifth Event: The Great White Throne Judgment (to include judgment/destruction of all the unsaved and anything, (heaven & earthly creation) tainted with sin. This **'Fifth Event'** appears to have two parts: The first of these is the judging of the **'Old Heaven & Earth'** and the second would be the judging of **'All Humanity'**.

Part One—Fifth Event: The Destruction of the Old Earth & Heaven → To me based on scripture the first thing to happen in the **'Fifth Event'** appears to be, **'The**

Destruction of the Old Heaven , Earth & Universe'. I base this on the combination of the following verses; Rev. 20:11, **"Then I saw a great white throne and Him who was seated on it. → Earth and sky fled from His presence, and there was no place for them."** Again, to me this appears to happen at the very beginning of the **'Great White Throne Judgment—Process'**. Now Rev. 21:1 **"Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea."** I also believe that the last half of this verse clearly states that **'The Old Heaven, Earth/Universe'** has already passed away—**Past Tense**. Also, this is the first verse in the next chapter of Revelation.

Part Two—Fifth Event: The Judgement of All Humans That Have Ever Lived →
All of the specifics of this event are covered in, Rev. 20: 12-15. **Note:** Also, based on the wording within these 5 verses it appears to me that this event will happen or occurs somewhere in Heaven—not sure what part—given: **The Old Heaven was just Destroyed?**

Sixth Event: The New Creation: Earth, Heaven & New Jerusalem

In Rev, 21:1a, God through Johns words tells the reader about the **'Heavenly Portion of the New Creation'**, **"Them I saw a new heaven and a new earth..."**

Seventh Event: All Saved Being Will Be With God for All of Eternity → and All Un-Saved Being Will Be in the Lake of Fire for All of Eternity'.

This **'Last Step in the End times Events'** will separate **Permanently → 'God and His Followers'** from **'All of Those, Who Elected (Freewill) NOT to Follow God'** for all of **Eternity**. Again, this point will mark the end of the old sin tainted creation and the beginning of the new creation, which will be sin free for eternity AND **'Free of the Ability to Sin for all of Eternity'**. For All Saved Beings → both, **'Human & Angelic Beings'** this will be the **'Beginning of the Best Point in Their Existence and it Will Last Forever.** However, for the unsaved beings, also, both **'Human & Angelic'** this will be the **'Beginning of the Worst Point in Their Existence and it Will Also Last Forever'**.

Again, a great future for some and a very, very bad future for others. I think this event makes the point very clear that our **'Freewill Choices in Life—Do make a Difference'** and they **'Can Be'** for **'All of Eternity'**.

SECOND SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → The Ones Being Judged:

I have combined these three portions of verses 12-13 because, because I believe that they speak to this same topic: **'The Ones Being Judged'**. Again, it is my opinion that this judgment will include all of the people who have ever lived, however, remember, others believe that this will only be for **'Un-Saved People'**. Again, read & make up your own mind!

First Verse → Ones Being Judged:

Rev. Verses 12a: "And I saw the dead, → great and small, standing before the throne..." Earlier we defined **"physical death"** as the absence of **'breath/life'**. In the beginning words of this verse it states, **"And I saw the dead..."** and given the way God normally writes—'meaning very specific', if He/God wanted this verse to mean; only the **'unsaved dead'**, I think He/God would have, so stated. Also remember, this would be one of the most important verses to, **'every human that have ever lived'**. And in all of the other descriptions that God uses to describe these people, (Rev. 12a & Rev. 13a & Rev. 13b) it appears, to me, to include **'All People'**. Also, at this point in what we call time, everyone will be dead—absence of breath. Again, just my opinion—read for yourself.

Verse 12a—Part Two: "...great and small, standing before the throne..." I am not sure why God only used two basic descriptions to describe **'everyone who has ever lived in this verse'**, when in other parts of the Bible He/Gods breaks the description down into many sections and example would be Rev. 19:17b-18, **"Come. Gather together for the great supper of God, so that you may eat the flesh of → kings, → generals, and → mighty men, of → horses and their riders, and the flesh of people, → free and → slave, → small and great."** Notice the first three words of our verse, **"...great and small..."** and the last three words of Rev. 19:18 are also **"small and great."** The words are reversed but the meaning is the same—and when you think about it, everyone on earth falls into one of these

two words **“great and small”** . Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own mind.

Again, I believe that God put these next four words in, **“...standing before the throne...”** to let everyone know that, **‘Everyone Who has Ever Lived Will Have to Stand Before the Throne of God and Answer for Their Action, While on Earth’**. I think it is also interesting that God put these words in this verse: **‘Which is the First Verse to Define Exactly Who Will Stand Before Him and Be Judged’**. Also, keep in mind that these three verses are talking about, **‘The Ones Being Judged’**. Again, just my opinion!

Second Verse → Ones Being Judged:

Rev. 13a: “The sea gave up the dead that were in it, → and Death and Hades gave up the dead that we in them...” To me the next description begins to tell us; one of the places where the **‘people who are dead → absence of breath—life’**, are coming from or perhaps, where they died? Most scholars do not address, why God broke up verse 13 into to two separate sub-areas → **“the sea”** and **“death & Hades”**. Therefore, I will give you my opinion:

First: God speaks about the people who died at **“sea”**, which covers about 71% of the earth’s surface. To the best of my knowledge there is no data on the number of people who have died at sea, however, before the invention of air travel the sea was the only way to move across large bodies of water and the deaths at sea was much higher than today.

Second: Next, God speaks about the people who died in **“Death & Hades”**, which I believe references the other 29% of the earth surface or what we would call the **‘Land’**. Again, this would reference the people who died on Land and were buried in the land.

These two descriptions would cover where: **‘All the People of the earth, who ever lived → Died & were Buried’**.

However, I think there may be another reason why God specifically pointed out the **“sea”** & **‘Land’**, which is because many of the 20 judgments during the

tribulation period, have a very big negative impact on the **'sea & land'**. Again, just another data point.

However, regardless of the reason, to me there is no question about, **'What the overall meaning of this statement is'** — He/God is **'Commanding'** the **'Souls/Spirit'** of all who have ever lived and died on the **'land or sea'**, to appear before Him/God at the **'Great White Throne – And To Be – Judged'**.

Last, as I have said before, I believe that God provides the reader with words that paint a mental picture that humans can understand and I believe that He/God is providing the reader with a **'Visual Picture of the Physical Side of Life/Breath'** in these words. However, **He/God** will also provide the reader with the **'Spiritual Side'** of this process in other scripture.

Rev. 13b: **"...and Death & Hades gave up the dead that were in them,** → Again, to me it appears that → **'God is Calling Everyone, Who Has Ever Lived & Died → Back in 'Some Type of Form' → So That They Can Present Their Case for Their Actions → While They Were Living of Physical Earth'**! To me there are three key words/phrases within this portion of Rev. 13b, which are:

ONE: The word **"Death"** → meaning, **'absence of breath—life'**, therefore, to me, would appear to indicate; **'All People, Who Have Ever Died'**. However, it could be specifically for people who lived & died on the **'Land—Surface'** of the earth. **Note:** Also, I said **'all people who have ever died'**, again, because, it appears to me that God uses the word **"Death"** in a general sense and not specific to the unsaved people of the earth. Again, just my opinion.

TWO: We have defined that the word **"Hades"** → means, the place where all people who have ever lived, **'soul/spirit'** goes when they die – **(absence of breath—life)**. Also, this same word **"Hades"** (Greek Translation) is used in the New Testament and is interchangeable with the word **"Sheol"** (Hebrew Translation) in the Old Testament.

THREE: Also, I think the words **"...gave up the dead that were in them..."** makes it clear that → **All of the People who had Ever Lived & Died (absence of breath—life)** at which time their **'Soul/Spirit'** was separated from their physical body and

being held in "Death & Hades/Sheol" was going to be raised into some form and required to stand before God the Father – for Judgment for their Actions while they were Living – (had breath—life).

THIRD SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → The Documentation/Evidence Being Presented:

Verses on → The Documentation/Evidence Being Presented:

Rev. 12b: "...and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life."

Rev. 12c: "The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books."

Rev. 13c: "...and each person was judged according to what he had done."

It appears to me that in this section God speaks about 'Heaven' (unclear exactly who this is that is doing the presenting, but it would make sense if it were an angel, as they are 'Gods Messengers and Task Specific') presenting the 'Facts or actions as recorded in the 'Books in Heaven' about the person's life while on earth'. As I have said before, it appears that there is more than one book involved in this 'recording process'. I will list some of the verses that speak about these books:

Old Testament:

Exod. 32:33, "The Lord replied to Moses, 'Whoever has sinned against Me I will blot out of My book'."

Psalms 69:28, "May they be blotted out of the book of life and not be listed with the righteous."

Dan. 7:10, "A river of fire was flowing, coming out before Him. Thousands upon thousands attended Him; ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him. The court was seated, and the books were opened."

Dan. 12:1, “At that time Michael, the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered.”

New Testament:

Luke 10:20, “However, do not rejoice that the spirit submits to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”

Phil. 4:3, “Yes, and I ask you, loyal yoke-fellows, help these women who have contended at my side in the cause of the gospel, along with Clements and the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life.”

Rev. 3:5, “He who over comes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never erase his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before My Father and His angels.”

Rev.13:8, “All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world.”

Rev. 17:8, “The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.”

Rev. 21:27, “Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life.”

And our text—Rev. 20:11-15

Again, I do not think there can be any question about the importance of having your name recorded in the **‘Lamb’s Book of Life’**. **Actually this is your ticket into heaven after you die**. This concept has existed and documented in scripture since the time of Moses, Exodus 32:33, above—as well as, throughout the New Testament. However, I believe that the Book of Revelation is where God—makes

it very clear: **'The Importance of The Words That Have Actually Been Written in These Heavenly Book'** and **'How The Words Written in These Books Will Effect This, Judgement Process'**. Remember, God provided us with three specific statements on this issue, within our five verses, as follows: Repeat from above;

The Documentation/Evidence Being Presented:

Rev. 12b: **"...and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life."**

Rev. 12c: **"The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books."**

Rev. 13c: **"...and each person was judged according to what he had done."**

The first of these three is mentioned is in Rev. 12b

First Verse: Rev. 12b: "...and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life." Based on the way this verse is written it appears to me that the first **'set of books'** that were opened were being used to record something other than **'Information About Salvation'** (**appears to be recording every action/thought by every person who has ever lived—just my opinion**) → given the **"Book of Life"** is used exclusively to record people's names who are saved. Again, the first **"books"** appear to have been used to record **'Actions or Events in People's Lives→ Saved and Unsaved – Both'**. This process is documented all the way back to **'Moses—the Exodus'**, (Ex. 32:33-above) time period. Also, the first time the word book is used, in our verse, it says **"...and books were opened."**, which to me is a general statement about more than one book. However the next time the word book is used it says, **"Another book was opened, which is the book of life"**. This time God gives the book a name → **"...the book of life."** Again, read for yourself and make up your own mind. Also, while reading scripture on this specific event (**The Final Judgment Process**) keep in mind this is the time when, **'Documentation—Evidence is Being Presented before God the Father'**.

The next two verses appear to be **'Saying the Very Same Thing'**; also, I think it is worth noting; that when God is repeating this same subject **'Three Times'** and especially in a short portion of scripture; it is something He/God really wants you to take notice of and know about and understand.

NOTE:

If I am right and **'All People Who Have Ever Lived'** have to go through this process, I think this is the point where Jesus will enter the picture: **'As the Mediator for All Saved People → Unsaved people Will Have No Mediator—Only Themselves'**. I will explain the process that I believe both the Saved & Un-Saved will go through during this process. Remember we are at the point in time where all that you have done is flashing before your Eyes, as well as, **→ before God and all of heaven—as recorded in the books—nothing will be held back—everything will be laid bare!** I may add a little of my interpretation to this list of events but it is based on my understanding of; **'How God Has Explained This Process, in Scripture'**. Read and make up your own mind.

FIRST: The Way the Process Will Go for Un-Saved People at the Great White Throne Judgment:

Step One: I think each un-saved person will be called before God the Father to give an account of their life while on Earth. This event will take place in heavens court-room at which time their life will flash before their eyes: everything they ever did, each event and every thought—all will be presented by the prosecutor, as recorded in **'The Books'**. I believe that the **'Prosecutor'** could be the **'Holy Spirit'** and is somehow connected with the **'Laws of God'**. Remember, the Holy Spirit has been here on earth, throughout all of earth's history!

Step two: The prosecutor will compare every 'action, event or thought' of the person to **'God's Laws, Commands & Decrees & Even Creation It-self'** and point out every short-fall that has happened in each person's life → to the Judge.

Step Three: I think God will then ask the person to present **'Their Defense of Each Action, Events & Thoughts in Their Life, That Broke Each One of God's Laws, Commands & Decrees'** to the court/judge. I think un-saved people at this point will present every excuse for why they sinned and how it was not their fault—it was always someone else's fault and **'How they were Actually a GOOD PERSON'** and God should allow them into **His/Gods New HEAVEN'**.

However, at this point, I think God will ask the person → How can you, **as a created being justify breaking many/all of → My (Gods Laws, Commands & Decrees)** and **Never Repent of Any of these; NOR ask Me/God for Forgiveness** → Even though; I provided you with a way to have all of these **'Sins'** forgiven at no cost to you? Therefore, It seems like to Me/God, you are still a **REBELLIOUS BEING** and again I ask → **Why Should I let You into My Heaven?**

Step Four: God will then say, **'Based on ALL of the Evidence Presented and Based on the Fact that I am a Just God and Must Always Keep My Word; I am Forced to Find You Guilty and Next I Must Sentence You Accordingly.'**

Step Five: 'Sentencing Portion' I think sentencing will be **'Quick & Just'**. There are three verses listed below in the **'Sentencing Portion'** of our study that speak to this issue, however, I like these two,

Rev. 14b: "The Lake of Fire is the second death."

Rev. 15: "If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."

The last thing I will say about the sentencing portion is keep in mind this sentence is **'For All of Eternity'**.

SECOND: The Way the Process Will Go for Saved People at the Great White Throne Judgment:

Step One: I think each saved person will be called before God the Father, in heavens court-room and their life will flash before their eyes: **everything they**

ever did, each event and every thought—all will be presented by the prosecutor, as recorded in **'The Books'**. I believe that the **'Prosecutor'** could be the **'Holy Spirit'** and is somehow connected with the **'Laws of God'**. Remember, the Holy Spirit was here on earth, throughout all of earth's history!

Step two: The prosecutor will compare every 'action, event or thought' of the person to **'God's Laws, Commands & Decrees & Even Creation It-self'** and point out every short-fall that has happened in each person's life → to the Judge.

Step Three: I think God will then ask the person to present **'Their Defense of Each Action, Events & Thoughts in Their Life, That Broke One of God's Laws, Commands & Decrees'** to the court/judge. I think this is the point in the proceeding, where **'Jesus Will Step In'**, as our **"Mediator"** (scripture above) and tell or explain to the Judge/God the Father—Why all of this documentation (the information recorded within the **"books"**) **is not admissible**). The reason will be simple—this person's name is recorded in the book of life, Rev. 20:15, **"If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."** And again, this person's name is recorded in the book of life.

Note: Remember when someone's name is written in the book of life → which happens when a person repents of their sins and put their faith—eternal destiny in the shed blood of Jesus. I think there are several other things that will happen:

One: All of their sins are forgiven & is their ticket into heaven—based on the shed blood of Jesus, (Rev. 3:5) based on Gods promise,

Two: Accountability for their sins is removed from them and placed on **'The Shed Blood of Jesus'**, again, (I really like this one, Acts, 3:19, **"Repent, then, and turn God, so that your sins may be wiped out , that times of refreshing may come from the Lord."**) based on Gods promise

Three: When they died, the first stop for them was the **'Bema Seat of Christ'**, (2 Cor. 5:10) for their rewards, entry to heaven is already assured, **based on Jesus promise.**

Four: The next step will be sentencing—see below

SECOND & THIRD VERSES ON EVIDENCE DOCUMENTATION:

Rev. 12c: “The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books.”

Rev. 13c: “...and each person was judged according to what he had done.”

In these next two verses, God repeats → That the Information within these **“books”** (plural) will be used as **‘Evidence/documentation in your trial at the Great White Throne Judgment—Proceeding’**. I will provide a little more detail on each verse, as follows:

Rev. 12c: “The dead were judged according to what they had done → as recorded in the books.” Again, it appears to me that God is continuing on with the same thought process as in Rev. 12b above, **“...and books were opened.”** Except this time He/God provides the reader with little more information about the **“...books...”**, discussed in 12:b. This time He/God provides us with three specific pieces of information about this issue, as follows:

ONE: “The dead were judged...” Again, these four words appear to be a statement about **‘dead people’**; and does not specify any specific group, therefore, based on these words it appears to me that **‘All dead people will have to come before the Judgment Throne of God—both, saved & unsaved’**.

TWO: “...according to what they had done...” Next, I think God makes it very clear, the basis under which they will be judged → It will be based on their works while they were **‘alive’** and on earth. **NOTE:** However, keep in mind that there will be a big difference in the way the **‘evidence/documentation’** will be **‘ACCEPTED BY THE COURT/JUDGE’** for saved people vs. unsaved people.

THREE: “...as recorded in the books”. The last part of this verse speaks about; **‘How the evidence/documentation will be collected—stored away’**. It will be kept in **“books”** that are kept in heaven, therefore, I do not think anyone could or would be able to claim, that the evidence—documentation was tampered with before I was presented in court. Just joking!

Rev. 13c: **“...and each person was judged according to what he had done.”**

Greek Translator, **“And they were each (one) judged according to their works.”**

The reason I provided both translation is to show that God was very specific to point out that **“each (one) person”** was judged according to their works, which I believe supports my opinion, that all people who have ever lived will go before God in this court process. However, the saved group will have Jesus Christ as their **“Mediator”** and the unsaved group will only have themselves to plead their case.

However, I think the primary message from God in these words is that. **‘Whoever is being Judged in this Court-Room Process’** will be **“...judged according to what he had done”**, while on this earth, if the evidence-documentation is deemed to be **‘admissible’** before the court—Judge/God? Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own mind.

FOURTH SUBJECT in, Rev. 20:11-15, → Sentencing:

Like in any other court room proceeding the last part of this process is the **‘Sentencing Process’**, for those who have been found **‘Guilty of a Crime’**, which is exactly what will happen in this court room process. (Always keep in mind that during this process, only those people whose names are **‘Not Written in the Lambs Book of Life’** will be found guilty.) Also, **‘There Will Be No appeal’ From This Verdict’**, as this is like the **‘Supreme Court—of Creation’** and there is none greater to appeal too.

Preview: I think God gives us a little preview on this subject in Jude 7, **“In a similar way, Sodom & Gomorrah and the surrounding towns gave themselves up to sexual immorality and perversion. They serve as examples of those who suffer the punishment of eternal fire.”**

Also, in the next three verses; it appears, to me, that God is providing the reader with a lot more information about this **‘Sentencing Process’**; than just a **‘simple guilty verdict and sentencing’** – about the one being judged. It appears to me that this additional information is about specific promises God has been made which has been sprinkled throughout the entire bible and now God is going to make good on these specific promises. I view this as God completing **‘Prophecies’**.

I will explain as we move through these three verses.

Rev. 14a: “Then Death & Hades (Sheol) were thrown into the lake of fire.

“Death & Hades (Sheol)”, are the words that men have used to describe the most feared enemy of all ‘mortal’s’. These words describe the **‘End of Mortal Existence’ (death—absence of breath)**. I think that God is ‘referencing & fulfilling’ many previous scripture quotes/promises, about this subject, in both the Old & New Testament. Many of these previous scripture quotes/promises were: ‘Very Positive’ if you were ‘Saved/a child of God’ and many were ‘Very Negative’ if you were ‘Not a child of God’.

I will provide just a few of these biblical concepts & scripture quotes, as follows:

First:

God has told ‘His Saints’ that He/God has the power over ‘Death-Hade-Sheol’ and He/God will bring them (His Saints) back from ‘death/the grave’. This concept began in the Old Testament and continued on into the New Testament; Hosea, 13:14, **“I will ransom them from the grave (Sheol); I will redeem them from death. Where, O death, are your plagues? Where, O grave (Sheol), is your destruction?”** Again, I think this biblical concept **‘death/Hades/Sheol’** is further explained in the New Testament, 1 Cor. 15:22-26, **“For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own turn; Christ, the first fruits ; then when He comes those who belong to Him. Then the end will come, when He hands over the kingdom to God the Father after He has destroyed all dominions, authorities and power. For He must reign until He has put all enemies under His feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death.”** And verse 54-55, **“When the perishable has been clothed with the imperishable , and the mortal with immortality, then the saying that is written will be true: ‘Death has been swallowed up in victory’. ‘Where, O death, is your victory? Where, O death is your sting’?”**

Second:

I think God makes it known, this same biblical concept, (His/Gods Power over Death & Hades/Sheol) to 'His Saints', in many place within the New Testament. But I like these three best:

Resurrection of Jesus: Acts 2:22-24 **"This man was handed over to you by Gods set purpose and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, put Him to death by nailing Him on the cross. But God raised Him from the dead, freeing Him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for death to keep its hold on Him."** & Acts 2:31-32, **"Seeing what was ahead, he spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that He was not abandoned to the grave, nor did His body see decay. God has raised this Jesus to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact."**

Romans, 6:9, **"For we know that Christ was raised from the dead, He cannot die again; death no longer has any mastery over Him."**

The New Promise:

During the Lifetime of Jesus: Romans, 8:11, **"And if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also to your mortal body through His Spirit, who lives in you."**

The New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem: Rev. 21:4, **"He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away."**

Third:

Also, I think God makes it very clear in the New Testament that He/God has also given the **'Power Over Life & Death to His Son, Jesus Christ'** and it appears that this **'Grant of Power'** will extend from: **'The Beginning of Jesus Ministry to the Great White Throne Judgment'**.

Luke 7:11-17, focus on verses, 14-15, **"Then He/Jesus went up and touched the coffin, and those carrying it stood still. He said. 'Young man, I say to you, get**

up!' The dead man sat up and started to talk, and Jesus gave him back to his mother."

John 11:38-44, focus on verses 43-44, "When he had said this, Jesus called in a loud voice, 'Lazarus, come out!' The dead man came out, his hands and feet wrapped with strips of linen, and a cloth around his face. Jesus said to the, 'Take off the gave clothes and let him go'."

Mark 5:35-42, "While Jesus was still speaking, some men came from the house of Jairus, the synagogue ruler. 'Your daughter is dead', they said, 'Why bother the teacher anymore?' Ignoring what they had said, Jesus told the synagogue ruler, 'Don't be afraid; just believe.' He did not let anyone follow Him except Peter, James and John the brother of James. When they came to the home of the synagogue ruler, Jesu saw a commotion, with people crying and wailing loudly. He went in and said to them, 'Why all this commotion and wailing? The child is not dad but asleep.' But they laughter]d at Him. After He put them all out, He took the child's father and mother and the disciples who were with Him and went where the child was. He took her by His hand and said to her, 'Talitha koum!' (which means—'Little girl, I say to you, get up!') Immediately the girl stood up and walked around (she was twelve years old). At this they were completely astonished."

Rapture of the Church: 1 Thess. 4:13-18, "Brothers , we do not want you to be ignorant about those who fall asleep, or to grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope. We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in Him. According to the Lords own word, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left to the coming of the Lord, will certainly not proceed those who have fallen asleep. For the Lord Himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up with them in the clouds to meet to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord forever."

Fourth:

I think the fourth and final piece of information within this section, is that God will **'Keeps His Promises—To Both the Saved & the Un-Saved'**. In our verse I believe that God is stating that He/God will make good on His promise → He/God will **'Put an End to Physical Death'**! Remember when many of these verse were written they were **'prophecy'** and now, at this point in **(time)**, they will be **HISTORY!** **Note:** Also at this point in time → It appears that there will be no more **'Physical Life—Only Spiritual Life'**. Again, just my opinion.

Rev. 20:14a—Part Two:

The last part of this verse tells the reader; What is going to happen to **'Death & Hades/Sheol'**: Rev. 20:14a, **"Then Death & Hades (Sheol) → were thrown into the lake of fire.** Again, I think God is providing the reader with several pieces of information, which are as follows:

One: In my opinion, **'Death & Hades-Sheol'** have been found guilty of **'A Crime/Sin Against God'** and therefore, are being condemned to **"...the lake of fire"** for all of eternity. To me this statement, by God, puts an end to **'Physical Death'** forever and **'Allows All Saved Humanity'** to commune with God for all of eternity, which is exactly → **How God Wanted it to be – from the Beginning (Garden of Eden)**. Except this time we will be in a **'New Pure Spiritual Form—In-Capable of Sin'**.

Two: I think another way to look at this verse is that God is putting an end to **'Anything Tainted with Sin—from the Old Creation'**.

Three: I think the other way to look at these words is that God will have put an **'Impenetrable Void'** between the **'Lake of Fire and Gods New Heaven , Earth and Jerusalem'**. Therefore, nothing in the **New Heaven, Earth or Jerusalem** will ever have to fear **"Death & Hades-Sheol"** again. I think this is part of Gods plan to make everything **'Perfect & Pure—for His'** in **His New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem.** Just my opinion!

Rev. 14b: “The Lake of Fire is the second death.”

I think Gods primary reason for including this verse in this section is to **‘Restate or Define for All Readers’**, What this and the previous statement really means to the ones who find themselves in **“The Lake of Fire”**. It literally means that you will be separated from God (**spiritual death**) for all of eternity and in a place of constant torment , and again, for all of eternity. Again, based on all of this scripture I do not think any man will be able to say to God at the **‘Great White Throne Judgment’** that he was not told; What God desires were for him or How God wanted him to act while on the earth → There will be no excuse!

I think God also put these next words **“The Lake of Fire is the second death.”**, directly after our previous verse; **“Then Death & Hades (Sheol) → were thrown into the lake of fire.** To make sure the reader knew exactly → What being thrown into **“The Lake of Fire”** really meant. Another words:

First: Gods Provides the Action Portion; then **“Then Death & Hades (Sheol) → were thrown into the lake of fire.**

Second: Gods Provides the definition Portion of the Action Portion; **“The Lake of Fire is the second death.”**

However, I do not think this **‘Definition Portion’** is limited to just the previous words. To me there is no question that this definition extends to **‘All Who Find Themselves’** in **“The Lake of Fire,** as it, **is the second death.”** Which will last for all of eternity.

Actually God began telling men about the concept of; **‘Un-saved People Being Put in Burning Fire’** in the Old Testament; Deut. 32:22, **“For a fire has been kindled by My wrath, one that burns to the realm of death (Sheol) below.”** And extends throughout the entire Bible; This same concept is last mentioned in, Rev. 21:8, **“But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murders, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—their place will be the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.”**

Note: The concept of, 'A Second Death' is referenced many times in the Bible, not sure – How many, but a lot. However, I did find that the concept of "A Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur" is referenced at least 100+ time in both testaments!

Again, at this point in time, I think God's point is → 'Your Future is Sealed—Based on the Decisions (Freewill) You Made while You Were Alive (you had breath)'.

Rev. 15: "If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, → he was thrown into the lake of fire."

First: I think God put this last verse in to summarize for all men the words that He/God just provided in Revelation Chapter 20 verse 11-14. Also to me in this verse God make sure He/God completes the though process, that He began in this judgement section. Now in our verse He/God 'Re-States for All Readers-Exactly What it Means if Your Name is NOT Recorded' in; "The Book of Life", as well as, the reciprocal → What it means to have your name recorded in "The Book of Life".

Second: I think God ends this section with, 'The Great White Throne Judgment', by putting everyone on notice that He/God has → Provided All Humanity with a book, 'The Holy Bible' that provided men with the specific rules He/God wanted them to live by, in general, as it relates to other men and as it relates to Him/God. And within this book, the Holy Bible, He/God also provided men with the way (free gift) they can be saved, which will automatically record their names in the 'Lambs Book of Life' (automatic ticket in to heaven) and avoid the "The Lake of Fire". Again, the choice is ours to make while we are alive (breath) and on this earth—it is called –FREEWILL!

Third: Simply put, in one way or the other, it supports all of the biblical concepts that God has provided humanity since Creation!

SUMMARY:

We are now at the 'End of the First (Heaven) & Second (Earth) Creation'. All saved people are with God in the 'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem for all of Eternity' and all unsaved people are in the 'Lake of Fire also for all of Eternity'.

Revelation Chapters 21 & 22 are 99% focused on the **'New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'**, in terms of: **'A Basic Descriptions (In Physical terms that we can understand—even though it will not be the physical that we know) and Just How Perfect and Wonderful That They Will Be, for ALL Who Reside There'**.

Revelation Chapter 21:

General Information:

I believe that Revelation Chapter 21 begins the part of the Book of Revelation, where God tells **'All the People Who Have Ever Lived – Plus All of the Created Heavenly Being'** that → **'All of the First Creation Period is Over'** and **'The Second Creation Period: (New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem & The Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur)'** is about to begin. The primary difference in the first & second creation will be, **'In the Heavenly Side of this Creation'** → **'It Will be a Purified Creation—Period/Eternity'**. Whereas, what we are call the **'Lower Side of this Creation'** or **'The Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur'** will be **'Separated from God for Eternity and in Constant Torment'**. Also, there will be a **'void/chasm'** (meaning that **'No One'** from either place can pass from one to the other—nor can they see or understand anything that is going on in the other) separating these two places for Eternity.

Details on → 'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem':

The bible tells us that this **'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'** will be the permanent residing place for **'Three Specific Groups'**, which are:

One: 'God the Father—God the Son—God the Holy Spirit—which is the Three Components of the Trinity',

Two: 'Angelic Beings', which will be composed of; the two thirds of the angels that did not follow Satan, when the heavenly fall happened and any other angelic being that are not considered angels; like **'Living Creatures'**.

Three: 'Human Beings', have been defined as: **'The Saints or Saved People'** or **'Children of God'**, and they will come from all time periods (Adam to the very last person saved at the end of the Millennial Reign of Jesus on earth). The key to identifying these people is: **'All of Their Names Will Have Been Written in the Lambs Book of Life'**.

Details on → The Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur':

Unfortunately, there is a second group of **'beings'** that have also been defined in this chapter. God through John's words only dedicated one verse to this specific group. I think He/God only used one verse to describe this specific group because, He/God wanted Chapter's 21 & 22 to be focused on **'The Happy Things That His Saints Will Enjoy—for All of Eternity'**. Remember, **'All of the People Who Have Ever Lived—Just Went Through the Great White Throne Judgement'**, which would have been **'Very Harsh for Unsaved people/angels'**.

Again, this group I have defined as **'All of the Unbelievers or Unsaved from Adam to the last unsaved person, just before the end of the; → 'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'**, which is made clear in: Rev. 21:8, **"But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vial, the murders, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars (unsaved) → Their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. → This is the second death. (which is for eternity)"** However, within this one verse, God provides the reader with three separate pieces of information, which are:

First → God through John's words, defines for the reader some of the **'Attributes & Characteristics'** that define this group. **"But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vial, the murders, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars..."** all of which are breaking God's Laws.

Second → God through John's words, defines for the reader the **'Specific Place or Location'** where this other group will reside or be kept → again notice it is a place away from the first group. **"Their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur."**

Third → God defines for the reader, **'What It Will Mean To This Other Group → To Be in This Location' → This is the second death."** Meaning, **'Separation from God for All of Eternity'**. As well as, **"...the fiery lake of burning sulfur."**

Now we will begin a more detailed breakdown of Revelation Chapter 12, as follows:

Chapter Break-Down by Major Topic

Just as in many other chapter, as we move through this chapter God through Johns words provides the reader with a variety of subjects, therefore, I have broken the chapter down into what appears to be four separate section, by verse, as follows:

Section One, Statement of Facts/History—About the New & Old Creation: Verses 1-6:

In verse 1, God appears to be making a **'Statement of Fact/History'** about **'What Happened to the Old Creation'**.

In verses 2-4, it appears God is providing the reader with brief glimpse at the **'New Jerusalem'** and some of the **'Characteristics & Attributes that His/Gods Saints'** will receive in the **'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem – For All of Eternity'**.

In verse 5-6a, I think God is again, **'Making a Statement of Fact/History'**, about:

- 1) **'The New Creation'** → verse 5a,
- 2) **'The Old Creation is Gone—Actually UN-CREATED'** → verses 5b-6a,
- 3) **'One Last Benefit of the New Creation'** → verse 6b

Section Two, What Exactly Will Determine Who is a: Residences of the New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem or the Lake of Burning Fire – Defined: Verses 7-8:

- 1) **'How He/God will Determine Who Gets into the New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'** → verses 7;
- 2) And also, **Conformation** of: If you are not in **'Group One → (Meaning Saved—A Child of God –Name Written in the Lambs Book of Life)'**: **Where You Will Go, And → What This Will Mean to This Second Group –For All of Eternity'** → verse 8.

Section Three, “Characteristics & Physical Description of the New Jerusalem’: Verses 9-21:

In verse 9-21 it appears that God is providing the reader, through Johns words, with some of the **‘Characteristics or Physical Descriptions’** (as we understand physical descriptions) of the **‘New Jerusalem’**. Also, these words provide the reader with many implications & references to **‘Pervious Things—Imagery from the Old Creation’**. Again, something we can understand!

Section Four, ‘Spiritual/Physical Attributes for Gods Saints:

In verse 22-27, it appears to me, that God, through Johns words, has shifted to a new topic; providing the reader with some of the **‘Spiritual/Physical Attributes’** (as we understand physical descriptions) that will be provided to those who **‘Reside in the New Jerusalem’**. Again, to me it appears that God is providing words that we can understand to paint a word picture in our minds about the **‘New Heave, Earth &)focus) on Jerusalem’** in **‘Physical Terms—However, With Spiritual/Heavenly Implications’** → To me God had to do this because there are no human words; nor could the human mind understand the **‘Heavenly Word That Would Be Required to Explain What John is Seeing’**.

Now we will begin our verse by verse detail study.

Section One, Details: Statement of Facts—About the New & Old Creation:

In verse 1, God appears to be making a **‘Statement of Fact/History’** about **‘What Happened to the Old Creation’**.

Section One, Part One: (Verse 1)

Verse 1: “Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, → for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, → and there was no sea.”

In verse 1, God appears to be making a **‘Statement’** about **‘Two Facts & One Attribute that (I believe) He/God Has Already DONE (History at this point)—at**

This Point in Time? And providing the reader with some insight on the **New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'**, which are as follows:

Point One—Fact: **God is introducing, to the reader, through Johns words → To 2/3 of the New Creation'**, **"Then I saw a (1/3) new heaven and a (1/3) new earth..."** To me it appears that John will be the first human to see this **'Part of the New Creation'** and then provide the reader with a **'word picture'** of what he is seeing in the remainder of Revelation Chapter 21 & 22. Also, notice that in verse 1, God introduces the **'New Heaven & Earth'** first and tells the reader that the **'Old Heaven & Erath'** had passed away.

Remember, this **'Event'** will have to have happen at the very same **'second'** that the **'Great White Throne Judgment—Occurred'**, because 'Gods Saints will be sent directly to the **'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'** and the **'Un-saved will be Send Directly to the Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur'**. I know we cannot currently understand this concept with our current physics, but with God anything is possible!

Point Two—Fact: God is now reconfirming for the reader **'What Happened to the Old Creation'**, which He/God had already stated in Rev. 20:11b: **"The earth and the sky fled from His presence , and there was no place for them."** Now look at our verse 21:1b, **"...for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no sea."** Notice that our verse appears to be using the pass tense, however, the Greek Translator does not have the word **"had"** in it! Not sure what this means but based on the fact that the statement was first made in Revelation Chapter 20: it appears that the statement in Revelation Chapter 21 would be—**in the past tense. Just my opinion.**

There has not been a lot written on these words, 21:1b, **"...for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no sea."** but I believe that this is the culmination of what God began during the **'Judgement Process – During the Seven Year Tribulation Period, when He/God began to, Un-Created Creation'**. Then Jesus came to the earth as **'Lord of Lords and King of Kings'** and restored much of the **'Beauty of the Earth During This 1,000 year Period'**

(amount, unknow, but much better than today). Then Satan was release from the **"Abyss"** where he had been held for 1,000 years (Rev. 20:7-10) and once again **'corrupted the earth and Many of its People'**, which appears to be when God decided to **'Destroy—Uncreate the ALL of the First Creation'**. Again, just my opinion.

Point Three—Attribute: God now provides the reader with one specific attribute of the **'New Creation'** that is very different from the first creation: **"...and there was no sea."** I am not sure why God put this point in at this point. However, from this statement I think we can make several statements & assumptions, which are as follows:

- 1) There will be → **No oceans or sea salt water in the New Creation,** → **Actually Not Needed**
- 2) There will be → **No sea life in the New Creation,** → **Actually Not Needed**
- 3) The **New Creation** will be **'Primarily All Land—Except for the River of Life'**,
- 4) It appears that the only, what we call, **'Fresh Water'** will come from the **'River of Life'** —22:1-3, **"Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the great street of the city (Jerusalem). → On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. → And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations. → No longer will there be any curse. → The throne of God and the lamb will be in the city, and His servants will serve Him."**

We know that during the judgment process of the tribulation period, God turned all of the water on the earth (both salt & fresh) to blood, however, I cannot find anywhere in scripture a reason, Why there is no sea in the New Creation'. I guess we will just have to wait until we get there and ask God → Why?

Point Four—Prophecy: God provided His people with prophecy about this issue, back in ~ 700 BC through His prophet Isaiah; Isa. 65: 17, **"Behold I will create a new heaven and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind."** **Note:** If you go back and first read verse Isa. 65:17

it appears that God is talking about **'The Actual New Heaven & Earth'** and then in Isa. 65:18-25 God appears to shift to describing the period known as **'The Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth'**. I am not sure why God made this shift, but it is obvious that He is talking about two different periods, based on the wording/descriptions.

Also, when reading these verse keep in mind that God is talking directly to His people—Israel and promising them that somewhere in the future, **'They and Jerusalem would be Restored by God—(and To God—Zech. Ch. 14)'**. Remember the year is ~ 700 BC and the 10 northern tribes/Israel had just been destroyed by Assyria in ~722 BC; the 2 southern tribes/Judah would remain in their land until 586 BC, when Babylon would take them in to captivity for 70 years. God then follows up on this same subject in Isaiah chapter 66, where He/God provides additional words about **'Judgment & HOPE—for Israel'**. This chapter also appears to me to intermix comments about the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth and The Creation of the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'**; however, verse 22 speaks about the same issue as our verse, **"As the new heaven and the new earth that I make will endure before Me. 'declares the Lord', 'so will your name and descendants endure'."**

Isaiah Chapter 66, verses 23-24 shift back to talking/describing about the Millennial Reign of Jesus; also see Zech. 14:17.

Section One, Part Two: (verses 2-4)

As I said before, in verses 2-4, it appears God is providing the reader with brief glimpse at the **'New Jerusalem'** and some of the **'Characteristics & Attributes that His/Gods Saints'** will receive in the **'New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem – For All of Eternity'**.

Verse 2: **"I saw the Holy City, → the new Jerusalem, → coming down out of heaven from God, → prepared (as a) bride beautifully dressed for her husband."**

However, before we start our study of this verse I would like to point out something about – **'How I believe that God provides the reader 'Key Word' that**

let the reader know about the chronological flow of information in the first three verses.

Verse 1 → **“Then I saw...”**

Verse 2 → **“I saw the...”**

Verse 3 → **“And I heard...”**

Verse 2: Part One: **“I saw the Holy City, → the new Jerusalem...”**

It appears to me that God through John's words, now begins to expand for the reader the next thing that John saw, which was **“I saw the Holy City...”**. Also, if you look back at verse 1 you will see that John only saw two things (2/3 of the New Creation): **“Then I saw → 1) a new heaven and → 2) a new earth...”**, notice there is no mention of a **“New Jerusalem”** and we know that there will be a **‘New Jerusalem’**, because in verse John describes the New Jerusalem.

It is unclear why God split these two subjects (New Heaven & Earth vs. New Jerusalem) into two verses. However, if you read the rest of Revelation Chapter 21, verses 2-27, they all appear to be devoted to **‘Describing for the Saints’ → The New Jerusalem’**, whereas, the **‘New Earth & Heaven’** appear to only be a **‘Secondary Topic’**. Again, just my opinion.

Verse 2, Point One: Completes/fulfills previous prophecies given by God. There have been many but see **‘Point Four—Prophecy’**, above for one example, Isa. 65:17, **“Behold I will create a new heaven and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind.”** Isa. 66:22, **“As the new heaven and the new earth that I make will endure before Me. ‘declares the Lord’, ‘so will your name and descendants endure’.”**

Verse 2, Point Two: Because most of the last half of chapter 21 is used to describe **‘Specific Details About The New Jerusalem’**, which actually begins in the latter portion of verse 2.

Again, I am not sure why God broke out talking about the **‘Creation of the New Jerusalem’** and **‘The Creation of the New Heaven & Earth’** into two separate

verse, except that in verse 1 God makes a blanket statement about both the 'Old & New Creation', which was: That **"...a new heaven and a new earth..."** → existed, with no explanation of how they came into being, as well as, **"... the first heaven and the first earth had passed away."** However, in our verse God begins the process of providing the reader with a lot of specific details/attributes about one specific topic → the **"New Jerusalem"**.

Also, there are many scholars who believe that the **'New Jerusalem'** will be the home of **'All Saved People'** (all periods) and is what John 14:2-3, is speaking about; **"In My Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. I will come back and take you to be with Me that you also may be where I am."** The big problem with this interpretation is that Jesus was speaking directly to the **'Church Period Saints'**, which does not include, **'Saints from Other Periods'**. Therefore, to me this view does not appear to be correct. Read and make up your own mind.

Verse Two, Point Three → Attribute About the New Jerusalem:

God opens up verse two with a statement of fact about the **'New Jerusalem'** → it is a **"Holy City"**. I think the reason that the **"New Jerusalem"** is given this title **"Holy City"** is that it will be the **'Home of God/Jesus /the Holy Spirit → For All of Eternity'**. There are several places within chapter 21 that this is indicated: verses, 3, 10, 22-23. Verse 3, is a specific reference about the New Jerusalem, "And I heard a loud voice coming from the throne saying, **"Now the dwelling of God is with men, and He will live with them."**

Also, the Old Testament provides us with some insight on Gods relationship with the original city of Jerusalem:

Ps. 132:13-14, **"...for the Lord has chosen Zion (Jerusalem), He has desired it for His dwelling: This is My resting place for ever and ever; here I will sit enthroned, for I have desired it..."**

Zech. 8:1-3 I think God makes it plain His relationship to the city of Jerusalem in this verse; **"Again the word of the Lord Almighty came to me. This is what the**

Lord Almighty says; 'O am very jealous for Zion (Jerusalem); I am burning with jealousy for her.' This is what the Lord says: 'I will return to Zion (Jerusalem) and dwell in Jerusalem. Then Jerusalem will be called , 'The City of Truth', and the mountain of the Lord Almighty will be called 'The Holy mountain'.'"

In His letters to the seven churches, Jesus makes it very plain—what the 'City of Jerusalem' is to the church & also the Trinity: Rev.3:12, "Him (saved people) who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of My God. Never again will He leave it. I will write on him the name of My God and the name of the city of My God the New Jerusalem"

From all of this I think you get the idea of the importance of the city of Jerusalem (old & new) and → Why it is called 'A Holy City'.

Verse 2—Part 2: "...coming down out of heaven from God..."

God has just told the reader that the city of Jerusalem is "a Holy City" and now it appears that God following up this statement by telling the reader: Where the city is coming from; "...coming down out of heaven → from God..." To me these words provide us with three specific pieces of information:

One: Where the city originated from: "...coming down out of heaven..."

Two: Who created it and sent it: "...from God..."

Three: And last, I think these words answers the question: → Why the New Jerusalem' is a "Holy City" → To me the answer is simple→ 'Because of where it came from—The New Heaven, where everything has been purged of—Satan's Original Sin'.' At this point in time only things that are 'pure' will be allowed to be in heaven or come from heaven.

Last, there are many scholars who believe that based on these words; this 'New Jerusalem' will remain suspended somewhere between the 'New Heaven & New Earth'.

Note: I think that part 2 & 3 of this verse should be tied together as they both speak to the issue of 'Purity & Sinless'.

Verse 2—Part 3: “...prepared (as a) bride beautifully dressed for her husband.”

In this portion of verse 2 God continues to provide the reader with additional attributes about the ‘**New Jerusalem**’ — the **“Holy City”**. Except this time it appears to me that He-God shifts His method of providing information based on the **‘Purity of the New Jerusalem’** to **‘A Human Event’** that people of all periods would understand → which is the dress of a bride in a wedding, which in reality is also supposed to indicate, **‘Purity’**. There are many verses within scripture that allude to this concept, I have quoted several: Gen. 2:24, **“For this reason a man will leave his mother & father and be united with his wife, and they will become one flesh.”** Eph. 5:25-26, **“Husbands love your wives just as Christ loved the church and gave Himself up for her to make her Holy, cleaning her by the washing of water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but Holy and blameless.”**

Also, I think this is an extension of the words in Revelation 19:6-10, which is describing the **‘Wedding Supper of the Lamb to the Church’**, focus on 19:7b -8, **“For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and His bride has made herself ready. Fine linen, bright and clean, was given to her to wear.”**

However, I think this information also somehow ties into information that God **‘Specifically Geared to Israel and His Words to them in the Prophecy.** Ezekiel 11:16-25, focus on 16, **“Therefore say, ‘This is what the Sovereign Lord says; I will gather you from the nations and bring you back from the countries where you have been scattered, and I will give you back the land of Israel,”** I know that this specific scripture is talking about the return of Israel into their homeland, just prior to the **Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth**. However, the ones (Jews) who repent and are saved just prior to the Second Coming of Jesus will be part of the **‘Ruling Class’ During the Millennial Reign of Jesus on Earth’**. Also, in much of the Old testament, God promises Israel that He/God will restore Israel & Jerusalem. Again, not exactly sure how this works but I know Israel is involved somehow with the **New Jerusalem!**

Verse 3: “And I heard a loud voice → from the throne saying, → ‘Now the dwelling of God → is with men, and → He will live with them. → They will be His people, and → God Himself will be with them and → be their God’.”

I have also provided the Greek Translator translation of verse 3, because I believe reading both conveys a more complete meaning; “And I heard a great voice → out of heaven, saying, → ‘Behold, the tabernacle of God → with men! And → He will tabernacle → with them, and → they will be His people and → God Himself will be with them → as their God.’”

Keep in mind that in this one verse, God is telling everyone that He/God will make good on all His promises—prophecies (Old & New Testament) that → He/God will, once again ‘Live With All of HIS PEOPLE (Saved People) Throughout All of Eternity, in His New Creation’. As I have said many times before, Humanity started out in the ‘Garden of Eden—Walking with God’ (Adam & Eve) and now ‘Gods People/Children’ will return to where this process began, except this time they will be ‘Free of Sin or Even the Ability to Sin → And It Will Be For Eternity’!

Notice the similarity of the words in Zechariah 13:9b, “They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, ‘They are My people’ and, and they will say, ‘The Lord is our God’.” In this scripture God is talking about → How the ‘Restored Nation of Israel’ (also see Dan. 12:1-2) will react just before he ‘Second Coming of Jesus’ (the church and tribulation saints will already be in heaven).

Jesus also made this promise to the church, John 14:2-3, “In My Father’s house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. I will come back and take you to be with Me that you also may be where I am.”

Also, notice that in this one verse ‘God Repeats Himself Twice → God and Man Will be Together—For Eternity’!

Verse 3, Part One: “And I heard a loud voice → from the throne saying...”
“And I heard a great voice → out of heaven, saying...”

First: “And I heard a loud voice...” → Remember verses 1 & 2 started out by saying, “Then I saw...” and “I saw...” and they spoke to the issue of what John was seeing: “Then I saw the new heaven and new earth...” and “I saw the Holy city, the New Jerusalem...”. Now John follows this ‘visual picture up’ by telling the reader → What he was “hearing”, which was “And I heard a loud voice...”. Remember, when the scripture uses the term **‘Loud’** it normally means that something is being said that is important, like an announcement. The Greek Translator uses a different word, “And I heard a great voice...” (Webster’s Dictionary: “great”; meaning, large in size—huge—remarkable in magnitude, degree or effectiveness) which to me says that this “voice” was **‘Powerful’**. Again, just my opinion.

Therefore, if you combine these two words/meaning, “loud & great” I come up with; a “Voice” out of heaven is making a **‘Announcement that is Powerful’**. Again, just my opinion.

Second: “...from the throne saying...” → To me the next words in this verse were put in by God to make sure the reader knows exactly where these words are coming from → “...from the throne saying...”, and I think that if you use the word “throne”, then these words can only be coming from, **‘God the Father’**. However, if you use the Greek Translator, “...out of heaven, saying...” then I think it would be correct to assume that these words were ‘Coming From Heaven’, however, not necessarily from ‘God the Father’. Also, if you continue reading verse three, based on the wording, it appears that someone other than God the Father is making this announcement. Just my opinion.

Verse 3, Part 2: “...Now the dwelling of God → is with men, and...” “...Behold, the tabernacle of God → with men! And...”

I believe that in this one section of verse 3 God through John’s words makes it very clear for the reader, that **‘A Major Change has Taken Place in Terms of Gods Relationship with SOME MEN—Saved’**, which is defined as: “...Now the dwelling (tabernacle) of God is with men...” To me God put these words in: **First**, to let all of His—Saints know what the future holds for them and **Second**: it supports and

will fulfil all of Gods promises & prophecies, to His Saints about this issue. However, as I have said many times before; it also brings full circle what Gods original will was for His creation → To dwell with Men—His/Gods Created Human Beings. This process began in the 'Garden of Eden' and man chose to separate himself from God because of → **Disobedience—Rebellion → Sin**. Then, God provided all men with a way to **'Reconcile Them self with to God – through Jesus Christ: If they Chose too/Freewill!** This is one of the verses where God tells all men that, He—God will once again—walk with men just like He did in the 'Garden of Eden'. Also, remember this will happen because of what God did for humans and not what humans did for themselves!

Notice, the NIV uses the word "**dwelling**", whereas the Greek Translator uses the word "**tabernacle**". There are several definitions used in scripture for these two words: 'will tabernacle' or 'will dwell' or 'will pitch tent' or 'a place of abode' – you get the idea; However, this specific verse is describing where, → **'Gods Permeant Residence will be and it will be with His Men (Saints)—and it will be for all of Eternity'**. Also, if you go back to Deut. 26:11, you will find God making this same statement, "**I will put My dwelling place (tabernacle) among you and will not abhor you.**" (This was written in ~ 1,490 BC) To me this statement from God appears to carry a twofold meaning:

- 1) A direct promise to the 12 tribes of Israel, at that point in time and
- 2) A direct promise to all future saints.

The negative part of this statement is implied, which is → That **All Unsavd Men /Humans** will not be part of this group nor will they ever be where **'God is or Walk with Him—for All Eternity'**.

Again, this will truly be a great day for some and the worst possible day for others.

Verse 3, Part 3: "**...He will live with them. → They will be His people, and...**"

As I said before, God repeats what He has just said except this time He uses the words, "**live with them**" to describe 'How God will be with—interact with men (saints)'. To me this wording appears to indicate a 'More Personal Relationship

With Men'. Again, when you **"live"** AMONG a group of people (**I think the word "live" also means 'Evert-Day'**) therefore, the relationship that develops is much closer than if you are just there on special occasions or with no regularity.

Next, I think God makes a definitive statement, about this group of people, **"...They will be His people, and..."** that He—God has not made before in this chapter. It appears to me that as we move through this chapter God continues to provide more and more detail information to the reader about the **'Relationship That Will Exist Between God & Men During This Period and That Period Will Be → Eternity'**. Also, I think we can state that God is once again confirming for His Saints that He—God is keeping His word & Completing All of His Promises & Prophecies. Remember, Gods promise to Israel in Deut. 26:12, **"I will walk among you and be your God, and you will be My people."** This was written in ~ 1,490 BC. Also, remember what Zechariah 13:9b, **"They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, 'They are My people', and they will say, 'The Lord is our God'."** This was written in !~ 487 BC. This verse also ties into the words in the next section, **Verse 3, Part 4**.

Also, if you go back and read all two of these scripture areas you will find, the first; Deut. 26:11-12, is God promising Israel what He would do if they remained obedient → Then in Zechariah 13:9b is God 'Propheying': What Israel will do somewhere in the future → and now our verse is the fulfillment of that prophecy.

Note: before we go any further I would like to point out that because of the tense of the wording, some scholars believe that verse 3 is not God speaking but someone in the throne room of great authority → speaking for God. They have come to this conclusion because of the wording in the Greek Translator, where it appears someone else is doing the talking. I do not think it makes any difference as to the meaning of the words: If God is talking or If God is Authorizing/Telling some other 'Heavenly Being' → What to say. You make the call!

"And I heard a great voice → out of heaven, saying, → 'Behold, the tabernacle of God → with men! And → He will tabernacle with them, and → they will be His people and → God Himself will be with them → as their God."

Verse 3, Part 4: And now God ends verse 3 with, what I think is the most important statement that any saint could hear or what we could call the **'Grand Prize for These Saints'**, **"...God Himself will be with them and → be their God'."** Again, the only reason that I can think of, as to why God continues to repeat this one theme is: **That He/God Wants Every Human To Know What is in Store for Them – If They Repent and Return to Him/God.** Again, to me this is God Reassuring His Saints About His Promise to Them.

Verse 4: NIV, verse 4, **"He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. → There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, → for the old order of things has passed away."** Greek translator, verse 4, **"And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes. → And death shall be no longer, nor mourning, nor outcry, nor pain will be any longer; → for the first things passed away."**

It appears to me that God in verse 4 continues listing the **'Rewards/Benefits That the Saints Will Enjoy in the New Creation'**. However, in this verse God appears to provide words that would **'Paint a Specific Mental Picture in the Minds of All Humans' → Of Just How; Wonderful—Perfect—Joyful—Pain Free this New Creation will be for those who are → Accepted into It'**. Again, it appears to me that God uses words that all generations would understand to describes some of the, **'New → Physical → Spiritual → Mental Conditions'** that will exist in the **'New Creation for His Saints'**. Also, I think this verse implies that there will be an upside and a downside to this statement:

Up-Side: For the humans that are **'Accepted into this New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'**, all of these **'Blessing—Benefits will be Theirs for All of Eternity'**.

Down-Side: For the humans that **'Were Not Accepted into this New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'** but were sent to the **'Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur' → None of These Blessing—Benefits will be Theirs for Eternity'**. Only separation from God for all of eternity.

Verse 4, Part One: **"He will wipe away every tear from their eyes."** It appears to me that God is telling His Saints that, He/God will remove everything in His new creation that was in the old creation, that created **"tears"**, which in the old

creation, actually came from 'Angelic & Human Sin'. Remember, in the beginning, in the 'Garden of Eden' there were no "tears", as there was no sin. Keep in mind that 'All the "tears" that humanity has shed; he brought on himself when he Separated Himself from God—the Fall'. We know this statement in verse 4 is true because God has just stated in verse 3 that He has removed the separation that existed between Him & man forever: "And I heard a loud voice → from the throne saying, → 'Now the dwelling of God → is with men, and → He will live with them. → They will be His people, and → God Himself will be with them and → be their God'." For Gods saints the separation that has existed between God and man has been closed—forever. Note: This also implies that for the 'unsaved' this separation will exist for all of eternity. Truly a very sad day for some!

Verse 4, Part Two: "There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain..." To me God now list four specific things that have caused Humans to shed tears that He/God will remove from 'His Saints Existence for All of Eternity'. I am not sure why God limited His list to these four things, because in the last portion of this verse God makes a blanket statement that 'All or Anything that would Harm His Saints (In Any Way) —will be REMOVED from His New Creation'. The only thing I can think of is; God listed some of the 'Things' that Humans fear the most—just to let all of His future saints know 'How Wonderful the New Creation Will Be'.

Again, think of:

How your life would be if there was no more, "death" in your life, (family, friends or anyone) Remember, all "death" was created/caused by the 'original sin', which at this point in time has been removed from these saints.

How would your life be if there were no reasons for "mourning" (all of the reasons for "mourning" will have been removed from 'All of the New Creation'). Again, remember—All "Mourning" was created by 'sin'.

How would your life be if there were no more reasons—events that would cause you to "crying", (all of the things that make you "cry" in this life would have been

removed—remember all **“crying”** has been caused by sin!) I think the only exception to this concept/word maybe → The saints **“crying”** for Joy about their **‘New Home’**. Just my opinion.

How would your life be if there no more **“pain”** in your life—either, **‘Physical or Spiritual/Mental’**, (also remember all **“pain”** was caused by sin).

I think you get the idea, **‘Sin’** is what creates – **‘Humans to be Separation from God’** and **‘Humans Separated from God’** has as a by-product has created → **“death—mourning—crying—pain”** & anything else that brings **‘Harm to Humans’**.

Verse 4, Part Three: “...for the old order of things has passed away.” I think God put these words in at the end of verse 4 to make sure all of His saints know that **‘That the New Creation’** will be **‘Permanent & Perfect & Pure of All Sin—And All of the Negative Downstream Effects of Sin’**. Also, if you go back and read scripture, this is exactly what God has promised, and → **‘Now It is What He/God is Delivering’**.

Also, this is the second time God has told the reader that **‘The Old Creation is Gone—Forever’**. God first stated this in verse 1, **“Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, → for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, → and there was no sea.”** However, God does not stop hear, He restates this again in verse 5; **“He who was seated on the throne said, ‘I am making everything new!’”**

Remember, when we started our study of chapter 21, we said; verses 1-4 covered the following topics:

Verse 1: A **‘Quick Peek’** at the **‘New Creation’** and **‘What Happened to the Old Creation’**, **“Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, → for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, → and there was no sea.”**

Verse 2: A **‘Quick Peek’** at the **‘New Jerusalem’**, **“I saw the Holy City, → the new Jerusalem, → coming down out of heaven from God, → prepared (as a) bride beautifully dressed for her husband.”**

Verse 3: A 'Quick Peek' at the 'New Eternal Relationship Between God & His Saints', **"And I heard a loud voice → from the throne saying, → 'Now the dwelling of God → is with men, and → He will live with them. → They will be His people, and → God Himself will be with them and → be their God'."**

Again, the first two verse speak about the **'Physical Changes: New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'** that will have taken place. Then in verse 3 God tells the reader the **'New Living Conditions that Will Take Place, in The New Creation'**, which also speak to **'New Spiritual Conditions'**.

Verse 4: A 'Quick Peek' at some of the 'New Physical/Spiritual/Mental Conditions' that will exist in the 'New Creation for His Saints'. **"He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. → There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, → for the old order of things has passed away."**

Again, it appears to me that God has structured these four verses in a way, where He/God continues to provide more and more information to the reader in each of the three verses. Just my opinion.

Note: I cannot think of any human words that could be written to humanity that would or could make them feel any better than the first 4 verses in Revelation Chapter 21 → If you have placed your trust in Jesu Christ and are a born again Christian—Saint.

Verse 5: Verse 5, **"He who was seated on the throne said, 'I am making everything new!' → Then He said, 'Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true'."** Greek translator, Verse 5, **"And the One sitting on the throne said, 'Behold I make all things new'. → And He says to me, 'Write, because these words are faithful and true'."**

It appears to me that God begins a new subject in verse 5 and continues it in verse 6a. In verse 5a, God specifically tells the reader that He/God will, not only make the changes He/God stated in verse 1-4 about His/Gods new creation but in fact He/God will make **"...everything new..."**. This statement to me means, **'That – 'Men Will → No Longer Sin, Nor Will Its Effects Impact Gods New Creation or**

Even Have the Ability to Sin'. Then in verse 5b, God makes a factual statement, that he is giving His word on this issue therefore, **"Then He said, 'Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true'."** To me this is a **'Promise From God'**, therefore I take this statement as **'FACT'**, just like all of His words have been!

Now we can break these two verse down by sub-set and look at the meaning of the specific words/promises, as follows,

Verse 5, Part One: "He who was seated on the throne said, 'I am making everything new!'" I think it is interesting that God repeats the very same concept in verse 5, part 1, that he did in verse 4, part 3. Except this time God makes sure that the reader knows exactly – Who it is that is making this change: **"He who was seated on the throne said..."** and from this description there can be no question who it is – It has to be **God the Father**.

Next, "I am making everything new!" As I said, God again repeats what He had just said. And as I have already said, I think God wants His Saints to know that He will keep His promise to them, as to, **'He will keep His word and make everything Perfect & Pure for them for All Eternity'**. It also appears to me that God repeated this concept as a lead in to the last portion of verse 5: NIV, **"Then He said, 'Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true'."** Greek translator, Verse 5, **"And He says to me, 'Write, because these words are faithful and true'."**

Verse 5, Part Two: Remember, the first 5 verses of chapter 21 are all directed at re-assuring Gods saints that he/God is going to keep all of His promises to them. Therefore, now, He/God ends this section by once again telling His saints that they can believe that all of these events will take place—just as God has said, NIV, **"Then He said, 'Write this down, for these words are trustworthy and true'."** Greek translator, Verse 5, **"And He says to me, 'Write, because these words are faithful and true'."**

Verse 6a: "He-God said to me; → 'It is done'. → I am the Alpha & Omega, the Beginning and the End'."

Actually verses 5 & 6a are being presented by the same speaker and a continuation of one thought process. Verses 5 & 6 begins with – what I call the **“He Said”**. Go back and look at verse 5b: **“Then He said...”**, and remember the one doing the talking, in 5b, is defined as, **“He who was seated on the throne...”**, meaning **God the Father**, which is also the same speaker in our verse, 6a, and this is again confirmed in the beginning of verse 6a, **“He/God said to me...”**.

I believe that in verse 6a God is continuing the thought process he began in verse 5, however, it appears He/God now uses words that **‘Confirm’** what He/God has been saying: **“It is Done.”** Or confirming what He/God had just stated in, verse 5 **“I am Making everything New!”**, as well as, verses 1 & 2 of this chapter.

I think the last portion of this verse is also interesting; **‘Look at the words that God uses to close this verses’**: **“...I am the Alpha & Omega, the Beginning and the End’.”**, which is exactly what God just did → **He/God began one creation many years ago and has now just ended it** → **and has now just began another creation that will extend throughout eternity.** **Only an all-powerful God could do these kinds of things!**

Verse 6b: “To him who is thirsty, → I will give to drink, without cost, → from the spring of the water of life.”

I am not sure why God put these words in, at this point in Chapter 21, unless it is to **‘again’** reassure His Saints that He/God is keeping His promises, as to, **What the New Creation will be like for His—Saints, for all of Eternity.**

Go back and look at the sentence structure in 1-3 & then verse 4; **“He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain...”** In verse 1-3 God provides the reader with specific pieces of information about **‘The New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem; plus God’s Relationship with His Saints’** → Then He/God ends this section in verse 4 with some of the **‘Benefits/Realities of this ‘New Creation’.**

Now in our verses; 5-6, God provides additional information about the **‘New Creation’** in verse 5 and then, again follow it up in verse 6 with → **‘Yet some more ‘Benefits/Realities’ of this ‘New Creation for His Saints/Children’.**

It appears to me that God is providing, New Information About the New Creation and then following it up with 'Specific Benefits—for His Saints in this New Creation' in each of these two sections. Again, just my opinion.

This same concept has been talked about many times in the scripture. However, I like this one in Isaiah because it was written in ~ 712 BC, Isa. 55:1, **“Come, all you who are thirsty, come to the water; and you who have no money, come, buy and eat!”** Jesus also referenced this concept many times in the New Testament, John, 6:35, **“Then Jesus declared, ‘I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me will never go hungry, and he who believes in Me will never be Thirsty’.”** And John, 7:37, **“If a man is thirsty, let him come to me and drink.”**

This concept is further explained in Rev. 22: 1, **“Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life...”** and again in verse 2 and verse 17, all of which will be in the '**New Creation**'.

Again, this concept is mentioned many times within scripture, in both the Old Testament & New Testament—However, the root meaning behind this concept is always – **The way to Salvation—Eternal Life**.

Section Two: → Specific Attributes About the Residences of Heaven and Specific Attributes About the Residences of the Lake of Burning Fire → Defined:

Verses 7-8: “He who over comes will inherit all of this, → and I will be his God and he will be My son. → Verse 8, But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars → their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. → This is the second death.”

Again, God appears to change the topic in verses 7-8 and now begin providing the reader with specific attributes about the humans that will either go to → **The**

New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem' OR 'The Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur'. Keep in mind when reading verse 8, that this is the only negative verse in this chapter.

In these verses (7-8) God confirms for the reader, through Johns words, **'Some of the Specific Attributes'** that are attributable to **'Residence of the New Heaven, Erath & Jerusalem;** then He/God confirms **'Some of the Specific Attributes'** of the **'Residences of – The Lake of Burning Fire/Sulfur'**. I want to make it clear that this list is only a partial list and should not be considered a complete list for either group. Again, the two groups:

First Group → Verse 7: 'How He/God will Determine Who Gets into the New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem'.

Second Group → Verse 8: And also, Gods Conformation of: If you are not 'Saved—A Child of God': Where You Will Go, And → What This Will Mean to This Second Group'.

Verses 7: "He who over comes will inherit all of this, → and I will be his God and he will be My son." God begins this section out by confirming **'That All of His Saints'** will receive: **All that He/God has already Promised in Chapter 21 & all of the words that the Bible has promised.** This list would be to extensive to list but you get the idea.

Also, notice that God uses **'Legal Terms'** in this sentence, which people from all time periods would understand. The first of these words would be **"inherit"**, meaning **'Blood Relative'**. Then God uses the words, **"My son"** meaning and **'heir'** to what the **'Fathers Owns'**.

Also, I like the way God structured or worded this sentence: God defines His Saints as follows:

Part 1) "He who overcomes...", then He/God provides words that would transcend all time periods, because they are clearly spelled out in the Holy Bible, which covers → The entire time of the first human creation. These same words/concept have been used a lot in scripture (to many to quote). However, if we limit ourselves to just the book of Revelation, these same words are used in

Revelation 7 times: Rev. 2:7 & 2:17 & 2:26 & 3:5 & 3:12 & 3:21 & 12:11. Based on this it appears to me that this concept of “He who overcomes...” is very important to God.

Part 2) “...will inherit all of this...”, meaning all that we have been talking about in chapter 21, as well as, all of the promises that God made to His creation in the Holy Bible. Again, God is making good on all of His promises to His Saints.

Part 3) However, to me the most important part of these words, He/God saved for last, “...and I will be His God and → he (All Saved People) will be My son.” Remember, God just stated this same concept in verse 3 above, “Now the dwelling of God is with men, and he will live with them. They will be His people, and God Himself will be with them and be their God.” Also, these are very similar words that were used in, Zechariah 13:9b, “They will call on My name and I will answer them; I will say, ‘They are My people’ and, and they will say, ‘The Lord is our God’.”, which were written to Israel in ~487 BC.

Verse 8: “But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars, → their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. → This is the second death.”

To me this verse appears to be out of place given, out of the 27 verses in this chapter this is the only **‘Negative’** verse. All of the other verses were very positive and dedicated to **‘Gods Saints’**. However, it appears to me that God wanted to once again provide the reader with a comparison with some specific attribute details between → **‘The Way a Child of God Will Act While They are on This Earth’** vs. **‘The Way a Child of Satan (Rebellion) Will Act While They are on This Earth’**. Also, this is the last time that God puts this type of detailed analysis about this subject in the Book of Revelation (chapter 21 & 22). **Note:** The closest comparison is in Rev. 22:11, and it does not have any detailed attributes listed—only the concept.

Overview of Verse 8:

Again, God dedicates **all** of verse 8 to:

- 1) Defining many of the **'Attributes of Unbeliever'**, 8a,
- 2) A description of **'The Part of the New Creation'** that they will reside in for all of Eternity, 8b,
- 3) Last, a **'Spiritual Description of Their New Creation'**, 8c.

Verse 8a: **"But the cowardly, → the unbelieving, → the vile, → the murderers, → the sexually immoral, → those who practice magic arts, → the idolaters and → all liars..."** In this portion of our verse God list 8 specific **'Characteristics or Attributes'** of and unsaved person (should not be considered all inclusive). I think each of these has a specific meaning as it relates to: **'How each person lived their life'** or **'Specific actions that We did while Alive'**. We will review each of these separately.

However, before we begin I will quote several scriptures that also provide the reader with God opinion about these same types of sins and focus on one specific sin.

Exodus, 20:13, "You shall not murder."

Romans, 13:8-10, "Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellow man has fulfilled the law. The commandments, 'Do not commit adultery,' 'Do not murder', 'Do not steal', 'Do not covet', and whatever other commandments there may be, are summed up in this one rule: 'Love your neighbor as yourself'."

1 Cor. 6:9, "Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? → Do not be deceived: → Neither the → sexually immoral → nor idolaters → nor adulterers → nor male prostitutes → nor homosexual offenders → nor thieves → nor greedy → nor drunkards → nor slanderers → nor swindlers → will inherit the kingdom of God." In this scripture God list 10 specific sins (if unforgiven) will keep you out of heaven. Two of this are the same sin listed in our verse; **"...the sexually immoral...the idolaters..."** and eight are new types of sin.

Romans, 1:29-31, “They have become filled with every kind of → wickedness, → evil, → greed and → depravity. They are full of → envy, → murder, → strife, → deceit, and → malice. → They are → gossips, → slanderers, → God haters, → insolent, → arrogant and → boastful; → they invent ways of doing evil; → they disobey their parents; → they are senseless, → faithless, → heartless, → ruthless.” This scripture quote has an even more complete list of specific sins (21 sins), if unrepented, will keep you out of heaven,

Last, I think it is also interesting that the one sin that was listed in all of the scripture quotes above was, **“murder”**. If you go back to Genesis chapter 6, which is the time of ‘Noah and the Flood’ and look at what types of human actions caused God to destroy the world → **“murder”** was the one specific sin spelled out by God of the two types of actions described by God: Gen. 6:9-13a, **“Now the earth was corrupted (turned completely away from all that is of God) in Gods sight and was full of violence (would include murder). God saw how corrupted (turned completely away from all that is of God) the earth had become, for all the people on the earth had corrupted (turned completely away from all that is of God) their ways. So God said to Noah, ‘I am going to put an end to all people, for the earth is filled with violence (would include murder)...”**. Again, just an interesting piece of information—However, based on this → **‘What do you think God thinks about Abortion’?**

Note: It is my opinion that **“murder”** is the worst sin that a person can commit against another person, because this **‘Specific Act’** is something that a person cannot **‘Un-Do’**, once it has been done. Only God can create life or raise people from death. Also, this **‘Specific Act’** is limited to one person to another, and does not include sins against God, in terms of being the worst sin a person can do!

There are many other scripture that we could quote on this same subject, but I think you get the idea. Now we can review each of the sins God listed in our verses, as follows:

Verse 8a—One → “But the cowardly...” To me these words were put in by God for the humans → **‘Who did not have the Human Strength—Will-Power to Reject**

Sin (the world) and Bend the Knee to God the Creator—Even though they knew Him as God'. I think Jesus spoke about these people in His Parable of the Sower in Matt. 13:1-23. In the first 9 verse Matthew list all of the **'Places Where Seed'** (the word of God) can be sown & in verses 18-23, Matthew list all of the **'Ways Evil & Life'** can steal it away from you. I think these are the people who do not have the 'Spiritual Strength/Insight' to fight off 'Evil & the Life/World', therefore, they take the path of least resistance or the path that they really desire. The problem is, this path may be very easy and even appealing to the human senses, however, both the short and eternal consequences are **'Not So Good'**.

I think another way to look at these words is, 'That there are people – Who do not have the **'courage'** to acknowledge Jesus—God in front of the world', therefore, they will be lost. In Matthew 10:32-33, Jesus says this, **"Whoever, acknowledges me before men, I will acknowledge him before My Father in heaven."** Again, sounds like a **"coward"** to me!

Verse 8a—Two → **"...the unbelieving..."** At first this appeared to me to be a catch all for all unbelievers. However, after reading several scripture quotes I believe it addresses a **'Specific Group of Sinners'**, which the bible defines as **'sheep or followers'**: 2 Thess. 2:10, **"...and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because They refuse to love (believe) the TRUTH and so be saved."** Then God follows this verse up with what I call the **'Dirt Being Pulled in Over Top of You'**, verses 11-12, **"For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so they will believe the lie and so all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but delighted in wickedness."**

Again, it appears to me that there are people on this earth that regardless of how much you talk to them about Jesus/God they → Want No Part of It. Regardless of the facts that you present, they 'Want No Part of It'. I am not sure why this type of person exist; It appears that they are **'Not Only Happy in Their Sin'** but **'Content to Stay There → Regardless of the Eternal Out-Come'**. Again, just my opinion.

Verse 8a—Three → **“...the vile...”** This is not a word that I have seen used in scripture a lot therefore I looked it up in my Strong’s Concordance:

Used as a noun, it would mean; **‘dishonor’** and example would be, Romans 1:26, **“Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lust. Even their women exchanged natural relationships for un-natural ones.”** Meaning **‘physical human passion’** leading to **‘dishonoring their physical bodies and spiritual being’**.

Used as an adjective, it would mean; **‘filthy dirty’**,

Example One: Literally, old shabby clothing, Jas. 2:2, **“Suppose a man comes in to your meeting wearing a gold ring and fine clothes, and a poor man in shabby (vile) clothing also comes in.”** In this example the **“poor man”** would be considered **“vile”** to the rich man. Where in reality, the unsaved man is **“vile”** to God.

Example Two: Metaphorically, of moral defilement, Rev. 22:11, **“Let him who does wrong continue to do wrong; let him who is vile continue to be vile...”** Some scholars also point to Acts, 17:5, KJV, **“But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd (evil or vile) fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar...”**

Therefore, based on these definitions I would say that to be **“vile”** to God is a bad thing. It would appear that a **‘vile person’** would be against everything that is of God. Just my opinion.

Verse 8a—Four → **“...the murderers...”** As I said above, the word **“murderers”** appears in all of our scripture quotes above and seems to be what I would call **‘A Real No-No in Gods Eyes’**. I am not sure why this specific sin is listed in some many places in scripture. We know it is a sin against both God and man:

Against God → **‘The Ten Commandments’**, Ex.20:13, **“You shall not murder.”**

Against Man → Again, based on scripture it appears to me that it is also a sin against the person you murdered, and is so offensive to God that He/God, **‘Allows Other Men to Take the Life of the One Who Commits “murder”’**. Gen. 9:6,

“Whoever sheds the blood of a man, by man shall his blood be shed, for in the image of God has God made man.”

Also, it appears to me that if you ‘murder’ someone and if they were not saved—you have ended any chance that they had of being saved. I believe that this is why God views this action— **“murder”**—as a very big deal. Many human sinful actions can be ‘un-done’ but this is one that cannot be ‘un-done’ and it could have an eternal impact on a lot of different people!

Verse 8a—Five → **“...the sexually immoral...”** This is the second of two sins that God talks about in many scriptures and appears to be a **‘Big, No-No in His Eyes’**. Many scholars believe that this is the **‘Second Major Sin’** during the pre-Noah time period. They point to two verses: Gen. 6:5, **“The Lord saw how great the wickedness on the earth had become, and every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time.”** & Gen. 6:11-12, **“Now the earth was corrupted in God’s sight and was full of violence. God saw how corrupted the earth had become, for all the people on the earth had corrupted their ways.”** God provides the reader quite a glimpse of exactly what He/God thinks about this issue of **“...the sexually immoral...”**, which would include **‘homosexual behavior’** for sure, in Romans 1:18-32, which we have discussed many times. I think if you read these verses carefully you will find that **‘homosexuality’** is actually the judgement for **‘Rejecting God’s Laws’**. I will quote a few verses that make this clear: Romans 1:21-24

Step One: All men know that there is a God/Creator (This is defined in many places within the scripture and visible in nature and even the human conscience)
→ **“For although they knew God,**

Step Two: Because of **‘Freewill’** some men refuse to **‘Acknowledge God as God’** (because of various sinful/worldly reasons) **they neither glorified Him as God nor gave thanks to Him,**

Step Three: God then describes what happens to the **‘Human Heart/Soul’** that has rejected the help of the **‘Holy Spirit to Guide Their Life’**, **but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened.**

Step Four: Next, God describes the type of thinking (worldly) that **'Invades the Human Heart—Soul—Mind'**, that is without the **'Protection & Guidance of the Holy Spirit'**, **Although they claim to be wise, → they became foolish, → and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles."**

Step Five: Last, I think there are two ways to interpret this portion of our verse (and both have scripture to support them):

First: Would be that God **'ALLOWED'** them to utilize their **'Freewill'** to go uninhibited in the direction that they had chosen.

Second: Would be that God **'Sent them a Delusion'** so that they **'Would Not Change the Direction That They Had Set'**, **Therefore, → God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another."**

My opinion is that God does both →

First: He lets each human to use their **'Freewill'** to decide if they will serve God or Rebel against God and chose their own path.

Second: Then once the a Human → **'Knowing This is the Last Time the Holy Spirit Will Call—the Human Rejects this Last Calling of the Holy Spirit'** → God then **'Sends Them a Delusion'** after which they are lost forever. 2 Thess. 2:10b-12, **"...and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. → They perish because they refuse to love the truth and so be saved. → For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion → so that they will believe the lie and → so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth → but have delighted in wickedness."**

Summary:

Based on scripture, I do not believe that there can be any question that God wants **'All of His Created Beings (human)—To be Saved'**, John 3:16, **"For God so loved the world that he gave His one and only Son, that whosoever believes in**

Him shall not perish but have eternal life.” and He/God has provided anyone who **‘Will’** to come to Him → a way to be saved, which is → **‘Through the Shed Blood of His Son—Jesus the Christ’**. However, even though God has provided this **‘Redemption/Salvation Process Possible At No Cost to Any Human’** —It requires that the human **‘Willingly—Repent and Believe and Love God’** (meaning follow His Laws, Commands & decrees) of their own **‘Freewill’**.

I think the above analysis demonstrates, with scripture, how God deals with the issue of the **“sexually immoral”**. I do not think this means that those who have committed this sin, cannot **‘repent and be saved’**, however, I do think if they persist and knowingly **‘Reject the Holy Spirit’** then → I think scripture is clear – there is a point where God will **‘Send Them a Delusion, and Salvation is Lost Forever’**.

Additional Note: It appears to me that this is one of the first sins that men always go to, even though they know it is a **‘Big No-No with God’**. And it is one of the major sins that will also, always bring down: **‘Individual People & Families & Nation’**, regardless of how strong they think they are? Again, just my opinion.

Verse 8a—Six→ **“...those who practice magic arts...”** These words are also associated with the words like **‘Astrology, Magician, Sorcerers, Necromancy, & Witchcraft’**, which are spread out throughout scripture: However the meaning is the same and all humans are **‘Forbidden to Practice’**, by God.

Note: Before I did this study, I had no idea of the prevalence, of this type of thing; either in the past or what appears to be happening today—except maybe in a little different form? Again, this was a real eye opening study! Also, keep in mind that all of these **‘Astrology, Magician, Sorcerers, Necromancy, & Witchcraft’** are a **‘Big → No-No in Gods Eyes’**.

The general meaning for all of these words is: **‘A person who claims to understand & control, Special Powers, that are being provided to them by a ‘Powerful Spirit—Evil’**. Also, many of these words appear to be used interchangeably, depending on the bible translation you are using, but they all lead back to the same meaning—**Not of God**. Also, before we begin, I think we

need to understand that: many of the people who claim to possess this type of power were and are real and actually do possess some type of **'Actual Demonic Power or Unnatural Ability'**. There are many examples within scripture and I will quote some below for your review, as well as, list others, with a brief definition.

Astrology: The divination of the proposed influence of the stars and planets on human affairs and terrestrial events by their position and aspects. (*Divination: The art of practice that seek to foresee or foretell future events or discover hidden knowledge, by the interpretation of omens or by the aid of supernatural power.*)

Examples: Dan. 2:2, **"So the king summoned the magicians, enchanters, sorcerers and astrologers."** Also, Isa. 47:13 & Jer. 10:2 & Dan. 2:27, 4:7, 5:7, 5:11

Magician: A person who claims to understand and explain mysteries by magic—One skilled in magic. (*Magic: An extraordinary power or influence seemingly from a supernatural source.*) Examples: Gen. 41:8, **In the morning his mind was troubled, so he sent for all of the magicians and the wise men of Egypt."** Also, Gen. 41:24, Ex. 7:11 & 22, Ex. 8:7 & 18, Ex. 9:11, Dan. 1:20, Da. 2:2 & 7, Dan. 4:7 & 9, Dan.5:11

Sorcerers: A person who gained Power from the assistance or control of an evil spirit. This word/person is specifically forbidden in the 'Levitical Laws'; Examples: Lev. 19:26b, **"Do not practice divination or sorcery."** & Lev. 19:31 , **"Do not turn to mediums or seek out spiritists, for you will be defiled by them. I am the Lord your God."** And Lev. 20:6, **"I will set My face against the person who turns to mediums and spiritists to prostitute himself by following them, and I will cut him off from his people."** Deut. 18:9-14, **When you enter the land the Lord your God is giving you, do not learn to imitate the detestable ways of the nations there. Let no one be found among you who sacrifices is son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft or spiritists or who consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the Lord, and because of these detestable practices the Lord your God will drive out those nations before you. You must be blameless before the Lord your God."** Ex. 22:18, **"Do not allow a sorceress to live."** Also, Ex. 7:11, Jer. 27:9, Mal. 3:5, Rev. 22:15

Necromancy: A person who: conjuration of the spirits of the dead for the purpose of magically revealing the future or influencing the course of events.

The other terms used in the bible for this person is: **'Medium or Spiritists or Divination'**. Lev. 20:27, **"A man or a woman who is a medium or spiritists among you must be put to death."** Deut. 18:11, **"...or cast spells, or who is a medium or spiritists or who consult the dead."** 2 Kings 21:6, **"He (Manasseh—kings of Judah) sacrificed his own son in the fire, practiced sorcery and divination, and consulted mediums and spiritists."** Isa. 19:3, **"The Egyptians will lose heart, and I will bring their plans to nothing; they will consult the idols and spirits of the dead, mediums and the spiritists."** I am not sure what to say about these types of evil human actions, except they are being done by men who must truly be demon possessed. Also see: Deut. 26:14, Isa. 8:19-20 & 29:4, Lev. 19:31, Lev. 20:6, 2 Kings 23:24. Jer. 27:9, 1 Sam. 28:3-16, 1 Chr. 10:13-14, 2 Chr. 33:6

Witchcraft: A person who uses sorcery or magic to communicate with the devil or a familiar (I think this means—A close relationship like a dead family member). Ex. 22:18, KJV **"Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live."** 1 Sam. 15:23, **"For rebellion is like the sin of witchcraft and arrogance like the evil of idolatry."** Also, see Lev. 19:31 & 20:6 & 20:27, 1 Sam. 28:7-25, 1 Sam. 28:3 & 9.

Summary:

Again, I had no idea that this type of evil was so prevalent in the world, and it appears to have been in the past, as well as, the present—except today it appears to be in a different forms.

Verse 8a—Seven→ **"...the idolaters..."** The traditional meaning of **"idolaters"** is; **'A person who worships a physical object as God'**, however, I think it would be better defined as, **'A person who desires, lust after, craves—anything more than God; like: power, influence, fame, money, beauty, worldly acceptance—you get the idea'**. Again, to me this word **"idolaters"** covers a lot of ground, in terms of the actions within any humans life and humanities history has proven this →Since the beginning of time! I also think it is the driving force behind many entire societies that moved away from God, almost entirely. It also appears that the

leaders of these societies have played a major part in leading them away from God.

Again, the core concept of this word **“idolaters”** is also found in several other words within the scripture, like: **‘idol & idolatry’**. The way I normal view these words is:

- 1) The **‘idol’** is the thing/object/emotion being worshipped,
- 2) **‘idolatry’** is the human method/behavior/form a human uses in worshipping an **‘idol’**.
- 3) The **“idolater”** is the actual human that is worshipping an **‘idol’**.

The concept behind this word **“idolaters”** is mentioned many time in scripture; actually 100’s and maybe even thousands, because humanity has had a **‘Huge problem (open rebellion and rejection of the fact that God is the Creator) with this issue since humans were created’**. I have often wondered, **‘How do men get to this point in their lives’**, and have come up with the following conclusion: **‘Evidently many men are easily ‘deceived’ into believing the ‘lie—and rejecting the truth’, just as Adam & Eve were in the Garden of Eden’—6,119 years ago’!** It would appear that there is an internal emotion within all men that is easily deceived and allows this specific emotion, deep within humans to cry-out → **‘I want to be God or A God’**. I think God knew this would be a problem for many humans, therefore, He/God specifically defined this issue for men, which He/God called it sin and He/God also defined what His Judgement would be if men rebelled/sinned. Deut. 30:17-1, **‘The Issue, Defined for Men’ “But if your heart turns away and you are not obedient, and if you are drawn away to bow down to other gods and worship them. → ‘The Judgment Promised, if Men Rebelled’, I declare to you this day that you will certainly be destroyed. You will not live long in the land you are crossing the Jordan to enter and possess.”** Again, Just my opinion.

There are many verses that speak to this issue, like: God begins the **‘Ten Commandments’** with two commandments about this very issue: Exodus, 20:3-6,

First Commandment: “You shall have no other gods before Me.”

Second Commandments: **You shall not make for yourself in the form of anything in heaven above or on earth beneath or in the waters below. → You shall not bow down to them or worship them; → for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, → punishing the children for the sins of their fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate Me, → but showing love to thousands who love Me and keep My commandments.**

Base on the wording within these commandments; I would say that this is the **'Biggest No-No—in Gods Eyes'**, in terms of any human having a **'Relationship with Him/God'**. To me there can be **'No Relationship Between a Human & God—If Any Un-Repentant Sin Exist'**. Again, just my opinion, but I cannot see how the relationship would have any chance—given the first step any human has to make to develop a relationship with God is to acknowledge that God is God and man is a created being—created by God.

There are many references to this issue, however, I will list several, as follows:

'Idol' → (Anything worshipped—other than the God of Creation) Gen. 31:19, **“When Laban had gone to shear his sheep, Rachel stole her father’s household gods.”** Lev. 19:4, **“Do not turn to idols or make gods cast of metal for yourself. I am the Lord your God.”** Lev. 26:1, **“Do not make idols or set up an image or a sacred stone for yourselves, and do not place a carved stone in your land to bow down before it. I am the Lord your God.”** Ex. 32:19, **“When Moses approached the camp and saw the camp and the dancing, his anger burned and he threw the tablets out of his hand, breaking them into pieces at the foot of the mountain.”** I

have also listed additional scripture that provide other examples of **'Idol'**: 1 Sam. 19:13, Judges 18:14-17 & 31, 1 Chron. 16:26, Lev. 26:30, Isa. 66:3, Jer. 50:38, 1 Kings 15:13, Ps. 96:5, Acts 7:41, 1 Cor. 12:2, Acts 15:20 & 29, Romans 2:22, 1 Cor. 8:4 & 7, 1 Cor. 10:19, 2 Cor. 6:16, 1 John 5:21, Jer.14:22, 1 Cor. 8:4, Isa. 44:9-20, Ps. 115:4-8, Acts 17:16, Rev. 2:14 & 20,

'Idolatry' → (A wicked practice) Lev. 18:21, **“Do not give any of your children to be sacrificed (passed through the fire) to Molech, (idol) you must not profane the name of your God. I am the Lord.”** I have also listed additional scripture that provide other examples of **'Idolatry'**: 1 Kings 15:13, Rev. 9:20, Jer. 18:15, Eph.

4:17, 1 Cor. 10:14, Gal. 5:20, Col. 3:5, 1 Peter 4:3-4, Eph. 2:3, 1 Kings 12:32, 2 Kings 3:26-27 & 16:3 & 17:16-18 & 21:6 & 23:10, Ex. 32:6, Dan. 11:38,

'Idolaters' → (The people practicing 'Idolatry' are 'Idolaters), To me this verse looks like a good definition of someone who has become **'idolater or idolaters'** and Gods Judgment. Deut. 8:19, **"If you ever forget the Lord your God and follow other gods and worship and bow down to them. I testify against you today that you shall be destroyed, Like the nations the Lord destroyed before you, so you will be destroyed for not obeying the Lord your God."** I have also listed additional scripture that provide other examples of **'Idolaters'**: 1 Cor. 10:7-9, 1 Thess. 1:9, 1 Cor. 5:10-11, 1 Cor. 6:9, 1 Cor. 10:7, Eph. 5:5, Rev. 21:8, Rev. 22:15, Romans 1:22, Gal. 4:8-9, Titus 3:3, Kings 3:26-27 & 16:3 & 17:16-18 & 21:6 & 23:10, 2 Kings 21:3-5, 1 Kings 18:26, Lev. 18:21, Ex. 32:6, Deut. 14:1-2, 1 Sam. 19:13, Dan. 11:38,

Summary:

Again, based on all of these references, I think we can make two statements of fact:

- 1) God will not tolerate **'Idols, Idolatry & Idolaters'** humans.
- 2) Over the last 6,119 years: All of humanity has gravitated to this type of **'Rebellion—Idols, Idolatry & Idolaters'** at one time or the other. However, some humans have bowed the knee to God and ask for forgiveness, through the shed blood of Jesus.

Verse 8a—Eight → "...and all liar..." God ends this list of **'Rebellious People'** with a specific sin, that to me, at first, seems to be the least egregious of them all. However, once I began to look into the meaning of this word I began to understand.

First, I looked up the meaning of the word **'Lie'** → **'A false statement made with deliberate intent to deceive; an intentional untruth; a falsehood'** or **'Something intended or serving to convey a false impression'** or **'An inaccurate or false statement; a falsehood'**.

Then combine this with the definition of a 'Liar' → 'A person who tells lies' or 'A person who repeatedly tells lies'.

Then combine this with what God tells us in the Bible: John, 8:43-44, **"Why is My language not clear to you? Because you are not able to hear what I say. You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your fathers desires. He was a murder from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies he speaks his native language, → for he is a liar and the father of liars."**

The first lie every told was in Gen. 3:4, by Satan to Eve: "You will not surely die, the serpent said to the woman."

Some of Gods, Laws & Rules on this issue of lying:

- 1) The ninth commandment, Ex. 20:16 **"You shall not give false testimony against your neighbor."** No question, this is a command from God.
- 2) Lev. 19:11, **"Do not lie."** Again, this is a command from God.
- 3) Prov. 12:22, **"The Lord detests lying lips, but He delights in men who are truthful."** I think this verse depicts two different people groups: one who is honestly seeking God and; two, people are not truly seeking God.
- 4) Prov. 14:5, **"A truthful witness does not deceive, but a false witness pours out lies."** First I think this defines Satan and then his followers.
- 5) Prov. 14:25, **"A truthful witness saves lives, but a false witness is deceitful."** First defines Jesus vs. Satan; then all of Gods people vs. all of Satan's people.
- 6) Prov. 17:4 **"A wicked man listens to evil lips: a liar pays attention to a malicious tongue."** To me this means, 'Unsaved people will listen to the lie/liar because they do not have the truth in them-Holy Spirit'.

I have listed below some other verse, where God provides the reader with additional information on: How He feels/views the issue of a **'Liar—Lying'**.

Col. 3:8-9, “But now you must rid yourselves of all such things as these: anger, rage, malice, slander, and filthy language from your lips. Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices...”

Prov. 12:22, “The Lord detest lying lips, but He delights in men who are truthful.”

1 John 2:4, “The man who says, ‘I know Him’, but does not do what He commands is a liar, and the truth is not in him.”

Psalms 119:163, “I hate and abhor falsehoods but I love your law.”

Psalms 116:11, “And in my dismay I said, ‘All men are liars’.”

1 John 2:22, “Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Christ.”

Romans 1:25, “They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served created things rather than the creator—who is forever praised. Amen.”

2 Cor. 11:3, “But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent’s cunning, your mind may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ.”

Rev. 3:9, “I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews through they are not, but are liars...”

I think we can conclude from all of this scripture that: Satan is the father of all liars and he/Satan does his best to get **‘All of Humanity’** to believe his lies. However, Satan is very crafty so he first uses **‘deception’** to try to convince every human to believe his lies and not the truth of God. And once he has accomplished this he can begin to move a person further and further away from God and His truth, until they are lost forever.

Therefore, based on what I think we have concluded; It appears to me that the reason God listed this sin last—was because it is most likely the **‘Primary Root Cause—of All or Many the previous Sins Listed’** → Vs. 8, “But the cowardly, the

unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters AND THE LIARS.”

Satan also knows that; ‘If a person continuously refuses to believe the truth and willingly believes the lie’, God will send them a delusion and they will be LOST FOREVER’. 2 Thess. 2:10b-12, “They perish because they refuse to love the truth and so be saved. For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie and so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but have delighted in wickedness.”

Conclusion: To me, Satan’s primary weapon to cause every person to rebel against God is: ‘Deception—then the lie (remember Adam & Eve)—combined with each person’s evil desires—which are buried deep within each person’s heart/soul → And the Result is: ‘Refusal to Believe the Truth’.

Verse 8b, “...their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur.”

NOTE: Before we begin I think it is worth stating that throughout the Bible; The word “fire” has been primarily used to describe ‘DESTRUCTION or TOTAL DESTRUCTION’, and in some case ‘Re-Fining’. However, in this verse, we are talking about ‘the second death—eternal separation for God’. Last, do not confuse this ‘death’ with physical death, which is the absence of ‘breath’, whereas, this death is again the ‘absence of God – in their existence’!

Also, in this portion of verse 8, God now clearly states for the reader, where the group of people listed in the first part of verse 8 will reside for all of eternity. I think God continues to put these kind of statements in the Bible to make sure everyone knows for sure: Exactly what the rules are and the repercussions for breaking His/Gods rules are → for those who ‘Knowingly — Reject His/Gods Truth & Rules.

Remember in Revelation Chapter 21, verses 1-6, God list all that His saints will inherit, which He/God confirms this in verse 7, “He who overcomes will inherit all of this and I will be his God and he will be My son.” Again, I think verses 1-8

is clearly describing the **'Two Paths' → 'From which every person must choose one'**:

- 1) **Gods path for every human, which is 'Freely Chosen' by the individual human**
- 2) **Or → Another path, which is 'Freely Chose' by the individual human**

Last: I am not sure; what the specific mental and physical conditions will be in **"...the fiery lake of burning sulfur..."**, but Rev. 20:10b describes it this way, **"They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."** And we also know that if you are sent to **"...the fiery lake of burning sulfur..."**, your name was not written in the **'Lambs Book of Life'**, Rev. 20:15, **"If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."**, therefore, **'You will be Separated from God for All of Eternity'**.

Also, these same words have been uses in other places within the book of Revelation, as follows:

Rev. 14:9-10, **"A third angel followed them and said in a loud voice: 'If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or on the hand, he too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of His wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and the Lamb.'"**

Rev. 19:20, **"But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. With these signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshiped his image. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur."**

Rev. 20:10, **"And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever."**

Rev. 20:14-15, “Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”

Rev. 21:8, Our verse, : “But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars, → their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. → This is the second death.”

The New Testament also speaks about this issue:

Matt. 13:42, Jesus speaking, “They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where they will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.”

Matt. 25:41, “Then He will say to those on His left, ‘Depart from Me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’”

Jude, 1:22-23, “Keep yourselves in God’s love as you wait for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to bring you to eternal life. be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear—hating even the clothing stained by corrupt flesh.”

The Old Testament also speaks about this issue:

Isa. 66:24, “They will go out and look upon the dead bodies of those who rebelled against Me; their worms (means grub—maggot—'Mark 9:47b-48; “...where, ‘their worm does not die, and fire is not quenched’.” And the word “hell” in Greek means Gehenna; meaning, city dump) will not die, nor their fire be quenched, and they will be loathsome to all mankind.”

Gen. 19:23-24, “By the time Lot reached Zoar, the sun had risen over the land. The Lord rained down burning sulfur on Sodom and Gomorrah—from the Lord out of heaven.”

Mal. 4:1, “Surely the day is coming; it will burn like a furnace. All the arrogant and evildoer will be stubble, and that day that is coming will set them on fire.’ Says the Lord Almighty.”

2 Kings, 1:10, “Elijah answered the captain, ‘If I am a man of God, may fire come down from heaven and consume you and your fifty men! Then fire fell from heaven and consumed the captain and his men’.” This same concept is repeated in verses 12 & 14

Amos, 1:7, “I will send fire upon the walls of Gaza that will consume her fortresses.” & 10, “I will send fire upon the walls of Tyre, that will consume her fortresses.” & 12, “I will send fire upon Teman, that will consume the fortresses of Bozrah.”

Dan. 7:11, “Then I continued to watch because of the boastful words of the horn was speaking. I kept looking until the beast was slain and its body destroyed and thrown into the blazing fire.”

Jude, 1:22-23, “Keep yourselves in God’s love as you wait for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to bring you to eternal life. be merciful to those who doubt; snatch others from the fire and save them; to others show mercy, mixed with fear—hating even the clothing stained by corrupt flesh.”

Based on all of these verses I think we can all, clearly understand exactly, ‘How God Intended the Word ‘FIRE’ to be interpreted by Every Human that has Ever Lived’.

Verse 8c: “This is the second death.” I think God ended verse 8 with these words to further clarify/define His/Gods words in verse 8b, “...their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur.”, which is the “second death” or separation from God for all of eternity → meaning, ‘spiritual death’. Again, this concept is explained in Rev. 20:11-15, which is describing the ‘Great White Throne Judgment of God’ for all who have ever lived. The outcome of which is: The saved will be sent to the ‘New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem’ and the unsaved will be sent to the ‘Fiery Lake of Burning Sulfur for All of Eternity’, which is also the ‘Second Death—Spiritual Death’.

As I said in the beginning of our study of verse 5-8, at the end of time as we know it → **there is good news for some humans and very bad news for other humans** → all of which was spelled out in detail in the Holy Bible for all to read or in nature for all to see. However, what determines if a **'Human's Spirit/Soul'** is going to receive **'Good News'** or **'Bad News'** at this point in time is determined by: **'The Physical/Spiritual'** choices that each Human made while they were **'Alive—Had Breath'** and still on this earth—the first creation.

Section Three, "Characteristics & Physical Description of the New Jerusalem': Verses 9-21:

In verse 9-21 it appears that God is providing the reader with some of the **'Characteristics or Physical Descriptions'** of the **'New Jerusalem'**. Also, these words provide the reader with many implications & references to **'Pervious Things—Imagery from the Old Creation'**, and **'Who the Inhabitants will be'!** I believe that these verses, 9-21, are broken down into eight basic sub-sets, as follows:

- 1) Verse 9a, identifies the one speaking to John,
- 2) Verse 9b, identifies a: Relationship—Spiritual Correlation—Inhabitants,
- 3) Verse 10, Identifies the **'New Jerusalem'**, which is what will be talked about in the rest of the chapter → and how it relates to the inhabitants who will reside within it—see verse 9b!
- 4) Verses 11-14, provides the reader with a basic **'Visual Description/Beauty with both Old & New Testament Implications'** of the **New Jerusalem,**
- 5) Verses 15-21, provides the reader with a basic **'Physical (dimensions and beauty) Description of the New Jerusalem'**,

Again, this is a great chapter if you are going to be one of the **'Inhabitants of the New Jerusalem'**, but not so good if you are not!

Before we begin the **'Section Three'** I think it is worth noting that verse 9 & verse 10 needs to be studied together, as they relates to **'A City & Its Inhabitants'**. The way I view these two verses is the first makes a statement and the second, completes the thought process/statement:

Section Three: Part One, Verses 9-10:

(vs. 9), **“One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me, (statement →) ‘Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb’.** (vs. 10) **And he carried me away in the spirit to a mountain great and high, and (definition of the statement →) showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God.”**

Verse 9: Now, we can begin starting with verse 9, **“One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me, → ‘Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb’.”**

Verse 9a, Part One: Again, verse 9a, identifies the one speaking to John, “One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me...”. This angel has already been identified in Revelation Chapter 16, verse 1, **“Then I heard a loud voice from the temple saying, ‘Go, pour out the seven bowls of God’s wrath on the earth.”** We cannot be sure which one of the seven angels this is, as all seven completed their task in the remained of chapter 16 but we know for sure it was one of them. I would also think it was an important and powerful angel, as he was given the privilege to execute one of Gods bowl judgments and also interface with John. Just my opinion!

Verse 9b, Part Two: Again, verse 9b, defines or states a **‘Relationship or Correlation that Exist Between the Inhabitants of a City & the City Itself’**, **“...Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb.”** Many people over the years have been confused by this next section, **“...Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb.”** Because, when you continue reading verse 10b, it appears that the angel is calling the ‘City—A New Jerusalem’ the **‘Bride of the Lamb’**, in verse 10b, **“...and showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God.”**

However, I think the explanation is provided in a variety of places within Scripture and is relatively straight forward. I will list some of the more relevant scriptures in an order that I hope will help define this definition.

Our Verse: In which God is stating that what is being shown to John is, **"...Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb."** or what we call the Church.

Rev. 21:2, In this verse God is **'Begins the process of → Correlating (based on what He/God had said in pervious scripture) for the Reader → the Fact that the New Jerusalem is → The Bride of the Lamb'**. (I think this is where God **'Painting a Mental Picture of the Reader of What He/God Wants them to Understand'** **"I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, → prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband."**

Now I will provide some of the scripture quotes so that we can piece together a thought process that will bring us to the conclusion that God stated in Rev. 21:2 above.

Step One: Jesus tells us in John 14:2-3, that He/Jesus is going to prepare a place **"...Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb."** for us and will come back and take us to this place, **"In My Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with Me that you also may be where I am."** Again,, this is a very specific statement by Jesus and appears to be what we would call, **'Jesus Defining the Physical Place, where His Saints Will Spend Eternity'**. Also, remember, when Jesus spoke these specific words He/Jesus was talking to His disciples and followers (saints), however, as time passed, they apply equally to all saints.

Step Two: It appears to me that God is making a direct correlation between **'A Specific City (cities) and there Citizens'** in Genesis Chapter 19; **'Sodom & Gomorrah'** & and in Genesis Chapter 11; **'The Tower of Babel'**. **This correlation process would be just like our verses.** **Note:** Keep in mind when someone is talking about or describing a city → They are actually talking about and describing the **'People'** of that city, and this always has to do with their **'Physical & Spiritual: Characteristics and/or Attributes'**.

Step Three: Paul makes it very clear in 2 Cor. 11:2b, that the church is the ‘**Bride of Christ**’, “I promised you to one husband, to Christ, so that I might present you as a pure virgin to Him/Christ.”

Step Four: In scripture God, quite often, correlates the female gender to a city and the people living within the specific city being talked about. A good example of this would be in Revelation chapter 17, when God correlates the city of Rome to a ‘**Prostitute—the Capital City of the One World Religion**’. God then follows this up with chapter 18, where He/God correlates the city of ‘**Babylon (Capital City of the One World Government and Economic System)** with the ‘**Female Gender**’, “When the kings of the earth committed adultery with her...” Rev. 18:9. Both of these cities; Rome & Babylon would also include all of the people living within them. Remember in Rev.18:4b, God made this statement, “Come out of her My people, so that you will not share in her sins...”

Step Five: Again, as stated above, in Revelation 21:2, God makes a direct correlation between the ‘**New Jerusalem and a Bride**’, “I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride for her husband.”

Step Six: If you read all of Revelation Chapters 21 & 22; It appears to me that God was telling the reader that the New Jerusalem (also New Earth & Heaven) was created for a specific group of ‘**beings**’ → which were the ‘**Human Beings, Whose Names were Written in the →Lamb’s Book of Life**’ (I would assume this group would also include the 2/3 of heavens loyal angels). Rev. 21:9b-10b, “Come I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb...the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God.”

Conclusion:

Again, just my opinion, but it appears all of the above scripture would support my conclusion, therefore, I cannot see any confusion or mis-understanding on these verses.

Verse 10, “And he carried me away in the spirit to a mountain great and high, and (again, definition of the statement in verse 9) showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God.”

Verse 10a, Part One: In verse 10a, God through John words shifts gears and tells the reader that ‘The Angel has Moved John to a Different Locations’, “And he carried me away in the spirit to a mountain great and high...” It appears to me that God has already used this same type of language before during the time of Ezekiel, when God was telling His ‘People-Israel’ about; when the New Temple in Jerusalem would be re-built. To understand the entire meaning of Gods vision to Ezekiel you would need to read Ezekiel Chapters 40-48, Ezek. 40:2, “In visions of God He took me to the land of Israel and set me on a very high mountain, on whose south side were some buildings that looked like a city.”

As I have said before, If you go back and look at Revelation Chapter 21, verses 1-10, you will find there have been several points where God through John’s words indicated that a change was being made: either in → What he was Seeing or Hearing or Location:

- 1) Rev. 21:1, “Then I saw...”
- 2) Rev. 21:2, “I saw the...”
- 3) Now, Rev. 21:10, “And he carried me away in the spirit...”

Always, keep in mind that these types of transition phrases are when God wants to let the reader, through John’s words, let the reader know that the next thing that they are seeing or hearing or location in John’s vision is a change from what was previously being talked about. I think that God is just providing the reader with a lot of different perspectives of the issue being talked about. Just my opinion.

Verse 10b, Part Two: In verse 10b, John now tells the reader: ‘What he was seeing’, “...and showed me the Holy City, Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God.” Before we begin our analysis of this portion of verse 10b, I would like to re-quote verse 2a, “I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God...” The words are almost identical and we know

when God states something twice we need to take special notice. And if we look closer, you will see that God follows up verse 2a with the following words, **“...prepared as a bride (Remember the “bride” is defined as the church, anywhere pas the point of the Rapture) beautifully dressed for her husband (the Lamb) .”** Now go look at the words in 9b, which is the thought process that leads us in to verse 10, **“Come I will show you the bride, (the church) the wife of the Lamb.”** Again, these are the exact same concepts, except presented in two different ways. Again, I think this is just God trying to present humans with multiple data points to make it easier for them to understand what He/God is trying to communicate to each human. Keep in mind that these words also tie in to the Biblical Concept that **‘People can be Associated with a City’** (discussed above); **‘The City of Jerusalem Equals Gods People’**.

There have been numerous opinion about the meaning of this portion of verse 10 and most have to do with the wording, **“...coming down out of heaven...”** I will briefly describe a few and then give you my opinion, as follows:

- 1) I will start with what I believe to be the most laughable and the most current, They believe that this statement means that we are talking about; **‘Aliens’**, better known in current modern circles as → **‘Space Buddies’**. These people believe that these **‘Alien’s’** were our original creators and are now returning to do something—**check in on humanity!** I told you, you would like this one. **Note:** In modern circles this interpretation works well, because to them **‘All gods lead to heaven’**, because each **‘People Group on the Earth’**, identified and addressed their original contact with these aliens by different names and origins.
- 2) Next, this group believes that this statement is talking about the **‘Original Creation of the Earth’** and therefore, has already taken place. They also tend to take all of Revelation and the entire bible, from a **‘Spiritual Stand Point’**. Keep in mind this is not a small group as many people, in the past and present, try to **‘Spiritualize—much of the Bible and do not take it Literally’**. I am not sure how to answer this view; as you, as an individual, either believe that the Bible should be taken literally or spiritually and if you chose spiritually, then, **‘How do you determine –Which Portions?’** (Because

fulfilled prophecy could not be spiritual) Whereas, if you take the Bible, **'Literally'**, except where it specifically states to the contrary: **'You, then do not have to try to determine—what is Literal & What is Spiritual'**. Also, remember, **'Correct/Truth → Spiritual & Worldly, Knowledge and Understanding, only comes from God'**.

- 3) This group (Ebionism) believes that this statement is talking about the **'Temple—Jerusalem in the Time of Solomon'**. I am not sure what to say about this view except, **'I am sure Jerusalem & the Re-built Temple'** were very beautiful during this specific time period, except Rev. 21:27, tells us that, **"Nothing impure will ever enter it (The New Jerusalem)..."** and there is no question that in the **'Old— (Original's—plural) Jerusalems → There was a great Deal of Sin—within its walls'**.
- 4) This last group is, what I would call the best interpretation, as follows: They make three statements about this verses,
 - a) It come from heaven, **"...coming down out of heaven..."** and their opinion is that this New Jerusalem is, descending from heaven,
 - b) But that it will never reaches earth—it will stay suspended above the earth forever. Actually, this verse does not specifically state that it will reach the New Earth.
 - c) This New Jerusalem is **"...from God."** And is part of the **'New Creation → New Earth, Heaven and Jerusalem'**.

To me number 4 is the only way you could define this verse , as it, stays within the literal interpretation and does not add any meaning nor leave it up to the readers own interpretation. Again, just my opinion.

Section Three: Part Two, Verses 11-14:

In verses 11-14, God appears to again shift gears and begins to provide the reader with a basic **'Visual Description as to the Beauty of the New Jerusalem → with both Old & New Testament Implications'**. This process will continue in verses 15-21, by expanding for the reader additional details about the basic **'Physical (dimensions and beauty) Description** of the **New Jerusalem'**.

Now we will begin our detail study of verses 11-14, and I will quote all 4 verses so we can get a complete grasp of these verses:

Verse 11-14: “It shown with the glory of God, → and its brilliance was → like that that of a very precious jewel, → like jasper, clear as crystal. (Verse 12) It had great, high walls → with twelve gates, → and with twelve angels at the gates. → On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel.” (Verse 13) There were → three gates on the east, → three on the north, → three on the south → and three on the west.” (Verse 14) The walls of the city had twelve foundations, → and on them were the names of the twelve apostles → of the Lamb.” Again, verses 11-14, provides the reader with a, **‘Basic Dimensional Description of the New Jerusalem, as well as, Some Details About Its Beauty, with both Old & New Testament Implications’.**

Before, we begin I want to say that most scholars do not provide a lot of detailed analysis on these verses and most of this is my research/opinion.

To me God appears to provide the reader with four unique characteristics—attributes of the New Jerusalem. I will break down these, four unique characteristics—attributes of the New Jerusalem and provide some basic details about each, as follows:

Verse 11, “It shown with the glory of God, → and its brilliance was → like that that of a very precious jewel, → like jasper, clear as crystal.”

In verse 11, God opens up this section with what I call, **‘A “like” statement’.** Remember, when reading the Book of Revelation God/John wrote the book in two types of words:

- 1) words that we can understand by humans and should be taken literally,
- 2) words that try to provide the reader with a mental word picture that we can understand but is not the real/actual image or meaning of what John is (seeing, writing, hearing), because in group 2, the specific actions being described have never taken place or happened in human history, therefore we would not any way to comprehend them, → So God uses ‘descriptive/symbolic language that we

can understand'. God uses many of these **'Like Statements'** in many of the **'Trumpet Judgments'**, Revelation Chapter 8 & 9.

- 1) In the first part of this verse God/John makes a basic statement of fact, (To me this should be taken a basic Biblical Concept/Fact) **"It shown with the glory of God..."**, which cannot be comprehended by a human, on this side of death. Another words there are no human words that can describe the **"glory of God"**. Therefore, John adds additional words at the end of this verse (second part) so that humans would have some way to, at least, begin to understand the meaning of the first part of this verse, **"It shown with the glory of God..."**.
- 2) In the second part of this verse John adds words that would paint some kind of mental picture in the minds of humans. This is because he/John uses words that the people of that time would be familiar with and understand; and would also paint the same picture throughout all time periods, **"...and its brilliance was like that that of a very precious jewel, like jasper, clear as crystal."** Also, notice that John inserts the word **"like"** into this second group of words twice, to make use the reader is put on notice that this is not what he/John was actually seeing; only a comparison to words/something men would understand.
 - a) If you go back to the Old Testament, Ex. 28:15-28, you will find that **"Jasper"** was one the stone in the **'Breast Plate of the High Priest'**, **"...in the fourth row a chrysolite, an onyx and a jasper."**
 - b) Many scholars believe that **'jasper'** was the stone associated with the **'Tribe of Benjamin'**. Ex. 28:21, **"There are to be twelve stones, one for each of the names of the sons of Israel, each engraved like a seal with the name of one of the twelve tribes."** The last stone in the 4th row is **'jasper'** and Benjamin was the last male child of the **'Twelve Tribes of Israel'**.
 - c) Also, the **'breast plate of the high priest'** was to be associated with, Judgment, Ex. 28:15, Greek Translator, **"And you shall Make a breast plate of judgment..."**

- d) Jasper is a “...precious jewel...”, however, it also comes in a variety of colors, of which “...clear as crystal.” is one.
- e) However, based on all the other scripture in Revelation Chapters 21 & 22, I am not sure that God’s use of Jasper has anything to do with, the historical issue of the breast plate of the high priest. Verse 11 also makes it very clear that this stone was “clear as crystal” which appears to me to be the ‘core concept’ behind the use of this word, “jasper”. I will explain, as follows:

One: The primary concept in Revelation Chapter 21 & 22 is; **‘Describing the Future Home of God and His Saints and Angels’**.

Two: The **‘Beautify & Perfection’** of His/Gods **‘New Creation—Free of Sin’**.

Three: The fact that there is no **‘Temple’** in the New Jerusalem, Rev. 21:22, **“...because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple.”**

Four: The simple fact that **‘God & the Lamb is its Light’**, Rev. 21:23, **“The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the GLORY of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”** I highlighted the word **“Glory”** in this verse, because that is exactly the word God/John used in our verse to describe; **‘How the New Jerusalem will, Have Light’**, **“It shown with the glory of God...”** Also, I think the last part of verse 11 **like jasper, clear as crystal.”** was put in to let the reader know that, **‘Gods Glory/Light would Shine Throughout the City—meaning, Through, What we would call Walls’**, **“...clear as crystal.”** Again, just my opinion, based on my understanding of scripture, please read and decide for yourself.

Verse 12, **“It had great, high walls → with twelve gates, → and with twelve angels at the gates. → On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel.”** It appears that God now shifts gears and begins to provide the reader with some **‘Physical Characteristics/Attributes with Old Testament Implications of the New Jerusalem’**. In this one verse, God uses the number twelve, three times, in His description of the New Jerusalem. Also, keep in mind that God uses

the number twelve or some multiple of it in many of the descriptions that He/God provides the reader in the rest of this chapter.

It appears to me that God provides the reader with four different pieces of information in verse 12, which are as follows:

Verse 12, Part One: **“It had great, high walls...”** To me God uses three words in this section to convey the **‘concept of security’** that the **‘beings—both saints & angelic’** will have in the New Jerusalem.

- 1) The first word is **“great”**: Webster’s Dictionary defines the word this way; ‘notably large in size—remarkable in magnitude, degree or effectiveness—markedly superior in character or quality’. Also, remember when reading some of these definitions that they are talking about the **‘Home of God & His Priest—Tabernacle’**.
- 2) The second word is **“high”**: again, Webster’s dictionary defines the word this way; ‘at or to a high place, altitude—an elevated place or region—having large extension upward—constituting the late, most fully developed, or most creative stage or period—exalted in character—of relatively great importance, foremost in rank and **‘forcible strong’**. I like the last one best.
- 3) The last words God uses, **“wall”** → is for sure one that everyone would understand as it relates to the New Jerusalem. Normally when we think of a **‘wall’** we think of; trying to keep something in or out, however, I do not think God was using the word in this way. Therefore, I picked the definitions that I thought best fit our verse. Again, Webster’s dictionary defines the word this way; ‘a masonry fence around a garden, park or estate—one side of a room or building connecting floor and ceiling or foundation and roof’. To me these **“walls”** were not designed to keep **‘beings’** out or in but to frame out the new **‘Home of God—Tabernacle’**, as well as, for **‘His Priest’**. Remember, if you jump forward and read the rest of Revelation Chapters 21 & 22 you will find that ‘All Who Reside in the New Earth & Heaven’ will be not only welcome to enter these wall but required at least once a year, to worship and Praise God.

Conclusion: For # One above), **“It had great, high walls...”**

Therefore, I have put together a list of definitions in the way I believe God meant for us to interpret these words as they relate to → **‘The Home of God & His Priest— His Tabernacle’** → **‘Markedly superior in character or quality – an elevated place – exalted in character – foremost in rank and forcible strong and – one side of a room or building connecting floor and ceiling or foundation and roof’**, which describes – **‘The Home of God & His Priest— His Tabernacle or the New Jerusalem’**

Verse 12, Part Two: **“...with twelve gates...”** In this next set of words God continues His/Gods **‘Physical Description of the New Jerusalem’**, except this time, I believe, with **‘Old Testament Implications’**. It is also the first time God uses the number twelve in verses 11-14. There are a variety of **‘Old Testament Implications’** within these words, I will list what I believe to be the most important. However, before we begin, you need to understand that from the time of David until today the number of gates into Jerusalem has varied a lot, depending on the time period and who was in charge, I will explain:

First Period: Jerusalem at the time when David took over the city (~ 1,450BC) it had only **four gates**, and was more like a fortress. See 2 Samuel 5:6-16. I will list,

North Gate: Faced North

Water Gate: Faced east

Fountain Gate: Faced east

Valley gate: Faced west

Second Period: When the temple was rebuilt during the time of Nehemiah (~450BC) there were 10 gates into Jerusalem Also, keep in mind that there may be more than one name for any given gate; I will list:

Sheep Gate: Neh. 3:1 & 32; The very first gate mentioned is the sheep gate. It was called the sheep gate because this was the gate which the sheep and lambs used in the sacrifice were bought through. This gate faced north.

Fish Gate: Neh. 3:3, The Fish gate was mentioned next. It was called the fish gate because the fisherman of Galilee would bring their catch in through this gate to be sold. It also faced north.

Old Gate: Neh. 3:6, Following from the Fish gate was the Old gate. Nehemiah is the only book in the Bible where it is called the Old gate and it may have been one of the original gates made. Some scholars say this gate faced west and others say north-west.

Valley Gate: Neh. 3:13, Several valleys surround Jerusalem and this gate apparently opened out to the valley of Hinnom. This gate faced west.

Dung (refuse) Gate: Neh. 3:14, All of Jerusalem's refuse and rubbish was taken out through the dung gate, down to the valley of Hinnom, where it would be burned. Some scholars say this gates faces south-west and others say it faces south.

Fountain Gate: Neh. 3:15, The fountain gate is located near the pool of Siloah and was often used by the people for cleaning before proceeding on to the temple. Some scholars say this gate faced east.

Water Gate: Neh. 3:26, The Water Gate led down to the Gihon Spring which was located adjacent to the Kidron Valley. This gate faced east.

Horse Gate: Neh. 3:28, The horse gate was close to the King's stables and the men of Jerusalem would ride their horses out of this gate to war. This gate faced east.

East Gate: Neh. 3:29, The East gate is located on the opposite side of the Mount of Olives. And obviously on the east side.

Inspection Gate: Neh. 3:31, Also known as the Miphkad gate. The word in Hebrew has a military connection and according to tradition it was at this gate that David would meet his troops to inspect them. This gate was also on the east side.

Third Period: Jerusalem's Old City walls were re-built in the early 16th century by the Turkish Sultan Suleiman the Magnificent, have eight gates. All but one (the Gate of Mercy) still serve Jerusalemites and visitors streaming to its markets, and sacred and historic sites.

The Zion Gate: Bearing Jerusalem's earliest biblical name in Hebrew and English, this gate's Arabic name is the Gate of the Prophet David, as the Tomb of King David, on adjacent Mount Zion, is only a few steps away. Zion Gate leads directly to the Armenian and Jewish quarters.

The Dung Gate: This gate's unusual name derives from the refuse dumped here in antiquity, where the prevailing winds would carry odors away. Nehemiah 2:13 mentions a Dung Gate that was probably near this one. This gate leads directly to the Western Wall and the Southern Wall Archaeological Park.

Gate of Mercy: This gate, in the eastern Temple-Mount wall, may be the best-known of them all. Also called the Golden Gate or the Eastern Gate, it has been blocked for centuries, and is said to be awaiting a miraculous opening when the Messiah comes and the dead are resurrected.

Lions Gate: This portal is named after a pair of ferocious-looking animal carvings that flank it. They are actually tigers, the heraldic symbol of the 13th-century Sultan Beybars. It is also called St. Stephen's Gate, after the first Christian martyr, who tradition says was stoned nearby. Lions Gate, which leads to the Pools of Bethesda, the Via Dolorosa, and the markets, became famous during the Six Day War.

Herod's Gate: Despite its name, the notorious Judean king had nothing to do with this gate. In Arabic and Hebrew this north-facing gate, which leads to the Old City markets, is called the Flowers Gate. Some say the name derives from a rosette carved over it. However, in Arabic a similar word means "awakened" and may refer to a nearby cemetery and the hope of resurrection.

Damascus Gate: This most imposing of Jerusalem's gateways also faces north and is named for the grand city from which Jerusalem's rulers once came. It is always a busy thoroughfare, thanks to the bustling markets within. Below the 16th-century gate, archaeologists have uncovered part of the entryway built by Emperor Hadrian in the second century CE.

The New Gate: This is the only Old City entryway not part of the original design of the 16th-century walls. It was breached in the waning days of the Ottoman Empire to allow Christian pilgrims quicker access to their holy places within the ramparts.

The Jaffa Gate: This was the destination of Jewish and Christian pilgrims disembarking at the Jaffa port, hence its name. It led (and still leads) directly to the Jewish and Christian quarters, as well as to the most popular parts of the market, and to the Tower of David Museum, once Jerusalem's citadel and now a showcase of its history.

Summary: This is the best information that I could find on the inter-net and the Bible; I hope it helps your understanding of just, 'How many changes there have been in Jerusalem's Physical Layout over the last ~ 3,000 years'. Even though many scholars believe that the historical gates in Jerusalem is the 'Primary Topic' of what God is trying to convey to the reader in verse 12. I do not agree with this view; In my opinion, the above analysis is only part of the 'Meaning' of our portion of verse 12, "...with twelve gates..." and is only what I would consider the 'Secondary Meaning—Physical' of this verse. There is no question that our portion of verse 12 uses the word "...twelve gates...", as it relates to the 'Physical Layout of the New Jerusalem'. However, I believe that in our portion of verse 12, "...with twelve gates..." God begin to provide the reader with information that carries a much more 'Spiritual Meaning' that goes all the way back to the time of Moses and the Israelites at their exodus from Egypt, which to me would become the 'Primary meaning of these words' and then combined with the 'Physical Meaning' that we talked about above. To me God is using words like, "...twelve gates..." to describe 'The Current Physical Layout of the New Jerusalem', however, to completely understand this meaning/layout, we will need to look to, 'An Old Testament Spiritual Component', I will explain:

One: There is no question that based on the actual words, within verse 12, there will actually be, "Twelve Physical Gates" in the New Jerusalem.

Two: The question is: 'Why did God chose the New Jerusalem to have Twelve Gates', when, the worldly—physical Jerusalem, appears to never have had twelve

gates. I think the answer is simple and we only need to determine: **'What is the New Jerusalem'**? Based on Revelation Chapters 21 & 22 it appears to me, that it (Jerusalem) represents two **'Specific Things'**.

- 1) There is no question that the New Jerusalem is a **'city'**; Rev. 21: 2, **"I saw the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven, from God..."** The rest of Revelation Chapters 21 & 22 are used to describe **'The Physical Characteristics/Attributes of this City—The New Jerusalem → Plus many of the Spiritual Characteristics/Attributes'**. Keep in mind that this **'city'** will be used to house: **The God and the Lamb; Plus—the Priest of God/Lamb**, (We will talk more about this concept in verses 12b & 13) John 14:2-3, **"In My Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go to prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with Me so that you also may be where I am."** Given, in our verse, Jesus is talking directly to the church, as to where they will spend eternity, I believe He/Jesus was talking about the **'New Jerusalem in this verse'**, (more on this later). However, to me the **'Physical Meaning'** has to be combined with the **'Spiritual Meaning'**, if these verses are to be interpreted correctly.
- 2) To me the **'Spiritual Component/Meaning'** of this verse comes from the Old Testament, during the time of Moses, when Israel was led by God, out of Egypt. As I said the beginning this section of verses, they will have **'Old Testament Implication'**, that I believe carry over, and have **New Creation Implications'**. However, to correctly understand these verses both will have to be combined. The **'Spiritual Side'** what we would **'Call the Physical Side—A City/Housing'**, as I stated in # 1) above. All of this will be clarified in the remaining verse of this section.

Verse 12, Part Three: "...and with twelve angels at the gates." There is no doubt that this statement was put in by God to let the reader know that there will be an **"angel"** at every gate leading into the **'New Jerusalem'**. **Note:** We are not told, Why these twelve **"angels"** are at each gate, therefore, most scholars skip these words and have no comment or they, depict these **"angels"** has **'Powerful Guardians'** of the **'New Jerusalem'**. However, I cannot agree with this

interpretation. (Not that they are not 'Powerful Guardians/Angels') My opinion is that the 'New Jerusalem' will be 'Free of All Sin/Evil & Even the Ability for Its Beings to Sin at This Point in –What We Call Time', Rev. 21:27, "Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life", also it will be the Home of God & the Lamb, Rev. 21:3b, "Now the dwelling of God is with men, and He will live with them."

Therefore, to me there would be no reason for 'A Powerful guardian at Each Gate', but rather a 'Loving Welcoming Committee at Each Gate'. Again, I cannot imagine that there would be any reason for 'Protection in the New Jerusalem'. The God of Creation resides in this city and if that is not enough protection, then you cannot be protected. Again, just my opinion.

NOTE: To better understand the last part of verse 12, I think it needs to be combined with verse 13, I will explain in the next section.

Verse 12, Part Four: "On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel." **Verse 13,** "There were three gates on the east, → three on the north, → three on the south and → three on the west."

However, before we begin our detailed study of these verses, I would like to quote a portion from J. Vernon McGee's Commentary on the Book of Revelation, as I think it will help clarify many of the 'Concepts—Words and Description' being used in these verses. "There are twelve gates to the city, three gates on each side. On each gate is the name of one of the tribes of Israel. This is very striking and suggest immediately the order in which the children of Israel camped about the tabernacle in the wilderness wandering. (Key Concept/Information). The tribe of Levi was the priesthood and served in the tabernacle proper. The New Jerusalem is a temple or tabernacle in one sense, for God is there dwelling with man. The bride constitutes the priesthood who serves Him constantly. They serve as such in the city and dwell there as Levi did about the tabernacle. Everything in eternity will face in toward this city, for God is there. The children of Israel on earth will enjoy the same

relationship to the city that they did toward the wilderness tabernacle and later the city temple. This city will be a tabernacle to Israel. The children of Israel will be among the multitudes who come into this city to worship in eternity. They will come from the earth to bring their worship and glory. They will not dwell in the city any more than they dwelled in the tabernacle of old. Those who actually dwell there will be priest, who are the bride. The bride occupies the closer place to God in eternity, and the bride, like John in the Upper Room, reclined upon His breast. Songs 8:5, **“Who is it that cometh up from the wilderness, leaning upon her breast”** She is the bride and she has come up from the wilderness which is the present world. But the twelve tribes of Israel will come up to the celestial city to worship, three tribes coming up on each of the four sides. They will then return back to the earth after a period of worship, but the bride will dwell in the new Jerusalem.” I am not sure all of this is 100% on point but it does provide a good over—view of the general concept that is being described in these verses.

Again, to me in Verses 12b & 13 God provides the reader with a heavy dose of ‘Old Testament Implication’ and to understand these words we will need to go Back to the Book of Exodus and the time of Moses. I will list what I think are the key points that we need to understand to inter[pert verses 12b & 13.

Point One: The old creation is gone, Rev. 21:1b, **“...for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away...”** Based on this, we know that the ‘Re-Built Temple of God in Jerusalem (during the seven year tribulation period)’ has **“...passed away...”** and we are now talking about **‘The New Creation’**.

Point Two: The original Jerusalem was known as the **‘City of God’**, Joel 3:17, **“Then you will know that I, the Lord your God, dwell in Zion, My holy hill. Jerusalem will be holy; never again will foreigners invade her.”** and Isa. 52:1, **“Awake, awake, O Zion, clothe yourself with strength. Put on your garment of splendor, O Jerusalem, the holy city.”** and Matt. 5:35, **“...or by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.”** It appears to me that Gods relationship to Jerusalem has something to do with its (Jerusalem) location, remember it is

where the first 'Temple' was built and should be viewed as, where 'God Dwells— a Tabernacle'.

Point Three: (Establishing the meaning of Words) In the Old Testament, 'What was the Difference between the; 'Tent of Meeting and the Tabernacle'? The phrase tent of meeting is used in the Old Testament, specifically in Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers, as the name of a place where God would meet with His people, Israel. Therefore, this term 'Tent of Meeting', was used: Before the tabernacle was constructed: God met with Moses in a temporary tent of meeting: Exodus, 33:7 & 9, "Now Moses used to take a tent and pitch it outside the camp some distance away, calling it the 'tent of meeting.' Anyone inquiring of the Lord would go to the tent of meeting outside the camp. . . . As Moses went into the tent, the pillar of cloud would come down and stay at the entrance, while the Lord spoke with Moses" After the tabernacle was built, Moses no longer needed his temporary tent, and the term tent of meeting began to be applied to the tabernacle.

Point Four: God provided a detailed description of exactly; 'How the Tabernacle was Constructed' in Exodus chapter 26, too long to quote. Then, again in Exodus chapters 35:30 to 36:38, God provides additional details of, 'The Process that the Men of Israel Went through to Actually Built the Tabernacle'. Again, too long to quote. **Note:** In Exodus chapters 37-40, God provides us with information about the building of the 'Ark & Lampstands & Altars of Incense, Burnt Offerings & Courtyard & Priestly garments, Ephod & Breast-Piece & Other Priestly Garments & Actually Setting Up the Tabernacle'.

Point Five: God provides us with information of exactly ; 'How the Tribes of Israel were to Arrange Themselves Around the Tabernacle' in Number chapter 2. This too much to quote, so I will pullout the key points as it relates to this subject:

- 1) Num. 2:1-2, "The Lord said to Moses and Aaron: 'The Israelites are to camp around the Tent of Meetings (tabernacle of congregation) some distance from it, each man under his standard with the banners of his family.' To me the key point is , that the twelve tribes of Israel are to "camp around" the "Tabernacle".

Note: The next points list the side and the tribe that camped around the **'Tabernacle'**.

- 2) Num. 2:3-9, **"On the east...Judah—Issachar—Zebulun..."**
- 3) Num. 2:10-16, **"On the south...Reuben—Simeon—Gad..."**
- 4) Num. 2:17a, **"Then the Tent of Meeting and the camp of the Levites will be set out in the middle of the camp."**
- 5) Num. 2:18-24, **"On the west...Ephraim...Manasseh...Benjamin..."**
- 6) Num. 2:25-31, **"On the north...Dan...Asher...Naphtali..."**

Conclusion:

Therefore, to me based the five points listed above and the scripture quoted, to me there is no question that in verses 12 & 13 God is providing the reader with; **'The Exact Physical Position that the Twelve Tribes of Israel will be, as it Relates to the New Jerusalem'**. I also think these verses make another point, that the **'New Jerusalem'** would carry the same status as the **'Original Tabernacle'**, which would be the **'Home of God—and His Priest'**, Rev. 21:3, **"And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, 'Now the dwelling of God is with men, and He will live with them.'"**, except this time it will be in the **'New Jerusalem—Creation'**. I think the other way to look at this is that → Now God and man are right back where they started: **'In the Garden of Eden → Walking, Face to Face'**.

Also, another implication would be what was described in, Num. 2:17a, **"Then the Tent of Meeting and the camp of the Levites will be set out in the middle of the camp."** The Levites were to be in the middle of the camp, and their job/duty was to be **'The Priest of God → To the People'**. Keep this in mind, as we will continue or complete our discussion of this concept when we get to, Rev. 22:1-5.

Verse 14, **"The walls of the city had twelve foundations, → and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb."** To me in this verse, God provides the reader with several pieces of information; this time, primarily with **'New Testament Implication'** but also with **'Implications That Relates to All Saved People'**. Most scholars only discuss one topic as it relates to this verse, which is; the church was the **'Human Foundation of the Church'**, being described

in this verse. However, I will discuss several others because I think they relate to the, general understanding of Revelation chapters 21 & 22.

Before we begin I will quote scripture that I think ties a lot of these concepts/implications together, Eph. 2:19-22, (1) **“Consequently, you (church) are no longer foreigners and aliens, but fellow citizens with God’s people (Israel/Jews) and members of God’s household, (2) built on the foundation of the apostles (New Testament—Church) and prophets (Old Testament—Israel/Jews), (3) with Jesus Christ Himself as the chief cornerstone . (4) In Him the whole building is joined together (5) and raise to become a Holy Temple in the Lord. (6) And in Him you to are being built together to become a dwelling in which God lives by His Spirit.”** Again, keep in mind that Paul, in Ephesian’s Eph. 2:19-22, was writing the ‘Church in Ephesus’.

Just so you know, I will not discuss these in numerical order, but in the order that I believe they relate to our verse.

Number 3—Above: There is no question that **Jesus was the cornerstone of the church,** but also, **‘What made Salvation Possible for Everyone that has Ever Lived’**, (3) **“...with Jesus Christ Himself as the chief cornerstone .”**

Number 2—Above: There is also, no question that the **‘Old Testament Prophet’**, were the Humans that were responsible for **‘Preaching, Teaching and Spreading God’s Word – To The Jews and also Other Men—Prior to the Time of Jesus & Then the Apostles’**. Therefore, we would call them the **‘Humans that Wrote the Words of God, Which Became the Foundation of the Bible (Old Testament) Leading Men Back to God, Prior to the Time of Jesus’**. I make this statement based on the fact that, both of these groups (2) **built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets...”** and were the ones who physically wrote **‘The Old & New Testament’**, which is the **‘Inspired Word of God/Jesus to All Men of All Times’**. However, keep in mind that in our specific verses (Eph. 2:19-22) is only talking about **“...and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.”** However, we all know that the **‘Foundation of the 27 New Testament Books’** came from the **‘39 Books of the Old Testament’**.

Number 4—Above: (4) “In Him (Jesus) the whole building is joined together...”
In this part of the verses (Eph. 2:19-22) I believe God makes it extremely clear that, ‘Jesus’ is what pulled both the Old Testament – “prophets”, and the New Testament – “apostles” together in one ‘Body’ – “building”.

Keep in mind that this is one of the major points, God is making in this section, Rev. verses 11-14: In verse 12b God states, “On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel.” (Old Testament—“Prophets”) And now in verse 14, God makes this statement, “The walls of the city had twelve foundations, → and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.” Which is referencing the (New Testament Church – “apostles”). Again, to me God is pulling together both the ‘Old & New Testament Saints’ under one “foundation”, which is ‘Jesus, the Christ’. Therefore, it appears to me that the concept/meaning of # 6 – above is directly connected to # 4. First, (4) In Him the whole building is joined together...” second, (6) And in Him you to are being built together to become a dwelling in which God lives by His Spirit.”

Consolidated Meaning:

“In Him (Jesus) the whole building (Church Saints & Old Testament Saints) is joined together...”, ‘Now Re-Stated in More Detail’ → (6) And in Him (Jesus) you to are being built together (Church Saints & Old Testament Saints) to become a dwelling (New Creation—Temple) in which God lives by His Spirit.” → (God Will Walk Among Men—Again.) Again, just my opinion!

Conclusion:

Therefore, it appears to me that God is using the words in Revelation Chapter 21, verses 12-14 to specifically tell the reader: ‘The Being that will Reside in the New Creation will be → All Saved People’, however, it also appears that the location of specific groups maybe somewhat spread out, with in the New Creation. I will list groups by location:

- 1) The Church Saints will Reside in the New Jerusalem as Priest to the Trinity.

- 2) The Old Testament Jewish Saints will Reside, around the New Jerusalem just as they did around the original 'Tabernacle', which is probably located on the New Earth?
- 3) All other Saints will Reside – Scattered Out Across the Earth.
- 4) The 2/3 of the angels that did not rebel will be in, 'The New Heaven'.

Again, this is just my opinion as to the location of these specific groups, based on my understanding of scripture and my not be anywhere close to accurate.

We can talk more about this in class, as this is one of the 'Key Concepts' that runs throughout the Bible.

Number 5 — Above: In this part of the verse, **(5) and raise to become a Holy Temple in the Lord.** it appears to me that God is making a very specific point that is clearly stated in other parts of scripture, 1 Cor. 3:16, **“Don’t you know that you yourselves are God’s temple and that God’s Spirit lives in you?”** Also, 1 Cor. 6:15, **“Do you not know that your bodies are a members of Christ Himself?”** Remember when we were talking about the 'New Jerusalem' in verses 2 & 10 of this chapter, we moved forward and referenced verse 22 of this chapter which makes it clear, There is 'No Physical Temple' because, **“I did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple.”** However, we also stated that the 'city—the New Jerusalem' is being portrayed as the 'temple', because it will be the house of 'The Trinity and Priest of God—the Church'. More good stuff to come?

Number 6 — Above: I am not sure why, but it appears to me that God completes the concept within these verses, Eph. 2:19-22, by telling the reader, 'How or Why the first 5 Points makes the 6 Point Possible', **(1) “Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and aliens, but fellow citizens with God’s people and members of God’s household...”** Again, to me God is making it very clear to the reader, in this section, the 'Benefits' of being part of this group. I think it is also interesting that God began this section with the 'Benefits', followed up with the details of 'How these Benefits were Obtained'.

Conclusion, Verse 14:

Again, to me there is no question that Revelation, 21:14 **“The walls of the city had twelve foundations, → and on them were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.”** has very specific ‘New Testament Implications’, however, based on other New Testament scripture also indicates that there is Old Testament Implications, as well! Remember, this is the part of the Book of Revelation where God is pulling together both the **‘Old & New Testament Time Periods into One Concept/Conclusion’** and getting both the **‘Old Creations (Earth—Humans & Heaven—Angels) Ready for → Where They Will Spend Eternity’**. Again just my opinion.

Conclusion: Section Three: Part Two, Verses 11-14:

Two me God provided the reader with → two specific take-aways from these verses:

One: God provides the reader with a very specific visual mental picture that all men could understand throughout all time periods.

Two: God provides the reader with very specific **‘Old & New Testament Implications’** throughout these verse. It is my opinion that God has done this throughout scripture, start to finish, to demonstrate to those who want to read His Word, exactly just how interwoven His Words have been, again → start to finish, therefore, **‘Only the God of Creation Could Be the Author of the Holy Bible and Do This’**.

Remember, the **Holy Bible** has: **66 Separate Book** and **40 Authors** and **Written during a time period that covered over 1,500+ years** and in **3 Languages** and on **3 Continents**. Again, **‘Only the God of Creation Could Be the Author of the Holy Bible and Do This’**.

Section Three: Part Three, Verses 15-21:

To me in verse 15-21, God provides the reader with additional, very specific physical details that allows the reader to paint a more complete mental visual picture of the New Jerusalem, which include **'Specific Measurement Details'** (in human measurement) and also carry some very **'Specific Old Testament Implication'**. I also think the other thing this section does is provide the reader with a macro view in terms of just **'How Beautiful this City will be for its Residences—Priest/Church'**.

To me it appears the God breaks these verses down into four major parts, as follows:

Part One: Verse 15, is a general statement about what will be described in verses 16-21, **"The angel who talked with me → had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city, → it's gates and its walls.** I am assuming that this is the same angel that was talking to John in-verse 9, **"One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me, 'Come I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb'."**

Part Two: Verses 16-18, talks about some of the **'specific physical dimensions size of the city'**, note these dimensions are in human physical numbers; not sure if this is literal or figurative? These three verses appear to be split into four separate: **'physical dimensional—size references'**, as follows:

ONE: Verse 16-17a, begins describing the physical dimensions of the city, **(16) The city was laid out like a square, → as long as it was wide. (17a) He (angel) measured the city with the rod and found it to be 12,000 stadia (~ 1,500 miles) in length, and as wide and high as long."**

TWO: Verses 17b -18, begins describing the **'walls'** of the city, **He (angel) measured its wall and it was 144,000 cubits (~200 feet) thick, by man's measurement, which the angel was using. → The wall was made of jasper, → and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass."**

Part Three: Verses 19-20, describes for the reader the '12 Foundation of the cities walls—an Correlates each of the 'foundations' to a 'precious stone'. Verse 19, "The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. → The first foundation was jasper, → the second sapphire, → the third chalcedony, → the fourth emerald, (verse20) → the fifth sardonyx, → the sixth carnelian, → the seventh chrysolite, → the eighth beryl, → the ninth topaz, → the tenth chrysoptase, → the eleventh jacinth, and → the twelfth amethyst."

Part Four: Verses 21, specifically talks about the gates and the streets of the New Jerusalem, "The twelve gates were twelve pearls, → each gate made of a single pearl. → The streets of the city was of pure gold, like transparent glass"

Again, to me in this section of Revelation Chapter 21, verses 15-21, it appears that God singled out four specific areas for His saints, as it relates to the New Jerusalem and where they will spend eternity;

- 1) Physical Dimensions
- 2) Foundation Structural Dimensions, and
- 3) Wall Dimensions
- 4) Gates and Streets, Structural Details

Again, not sure if these verses were put in, just to give Gods, church/saints with a quick overview of the 'Beauty of Their Eternal Home' or they have some other deeper meaning or both?

Now we will begin our detailed analysis of these verses, which will again have both **Old & New Testament Implications.**

Section Three: Part Three, Verse 15:

Verse 15, "The angel who talked with me → had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city, → it's gates and its walls.

Again, to me it appears in that Verse 15, God appears to be making a general statement that is explained in more details in the remaining verses 16-21. Also, it appears to be split into three basic statements, as follows:

First, A General Overview of what will be described in verses 16-21, **“The angel who talked with me → had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city, → it’s gates and → its walls.** I am not sure why God used the word **“gold”** in this verse to describe, what the **“rod”** was made of, unless it was to make sure the reader understood that. We are talking about **‘Power & Royalty & Authority’**, you get the idea.

Second, letting the reader know that John is again talking/communicating with the angel in verse 9, **“One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues came and said to me...”**

Third, that this angel was getting ready to measure three specific parts of the city; (1) **“...measure the city, (2) it’s gates and (3) its walls.** And provide the reader with some specific information about the dimensions & size of the New Jerusalem.

Section Three: Part Three, Verses 16-17a:

Verses 16-17a, (16) **“The city was laid out like a square, (four cornered) as long as it was wide.** (again a square) → (17a) **He (the angel) measured the city with the rod and found it to be 12,000 stadia (~ 1,500 miles) → in length, and as wide and high as long.”** (In this statement the angel adds another dimension, which would make the city a cube) In this last section I think the Greek Translator has a better translation, **“...twelve thousand stadia its length → and width → and height → are equal.”** Again, this is the definition of a cube.

Verses 16-17a, In these verse God provides the reader with some specific dimensional information about the city as it relates to the → **‘overall physical dimensions/size of the city’**, and references back to one of the job assigned to this angel, (assuming it was assigned by God) in verse 15, **“...measure the city...”**

Again Note: Many scholars have argued over the years if these dimensions are literal or figurative? However, in Rev. 21:17b, **“...by man’s measurement, which the angel was using.”** We are told that they are **‘Human Measurements’**, therefore, they must be literal.

Also, keep in mind that this is the second time John has been involved in 'measuring something', however, in the first case John actually did the measuring. Also, the first time, it was the 'rebuilt, earthly temple in Jerusalem', Rev. 11:1, **"I was given a reed like a measuring rod and was told, 'Go and measure the temple of God and the altar, and count the worshipers there.'"**

These verses (16-17a) also provide the reader with three specific pieces of information about the **'overall physical dimensions/size, of the city'**, as follows:

One: **"The city was laid out like a square, → as long as it was wide."** In the first part of these verse, God makes it very clear that the 'foundation of the city is a "square". I have never seen any scholar speak about, 'Why God Chose This Design or Dimensions'. However, it appears to me that, if you read all of scripture about the dimensions/attributes of this city, it would have been a logical choice for God, as, the two primary numbers used by God to describe this city are (12—apostles & tribes) and (144 cubits—wall thickness, which is 12 squared or 144) and (12—foundations) and (12—gates) and (12—crops, in Rev. 22:2). Again, not sure this has anything to do with, 'Why God used the Number 12—but it seems to fit! Also, I think, in human terms a square is the most efficient form of building?

Two: **"He (the angel) measured the city with the rod and found it to be 12,000 stadia (~ 1,500 miles).** To me this portion of the verse, simply states a fact based on the, dimensional results of the angels measurement, which is again, using the number 12 or **"12,000 stadia"**.

Three: **("...12,000 stadia) → in length, and → as wide → and high → as long."** Again, I will use the Greek Translator because I think it provides a better translation, **"...twelve thousand stadia its length → and width → and height → are equal."** I began with the words in the last part of our # 2 above as a lead in to the thought process of our section. Remember we started these verses by stating that the city was a 'square', **"The city was laid out like a square, (four cornered) as long as it was wide."** And now in the last part of these verses, God expands His **'Dimensional Definition of the City to That of a Cube'**. Again, I think the Greek Translator provides a better and simpler description of the

'dimensional measurements of the city', by stating that the , "...length and width and height → are (all) equal.", which is the definition of a 'cube'.

Informational: To me the NIV translation uses too many words that appears to me to complicate defining the size of the city, as it has four measurements involved:

First Measurement: "in length"

Second measurement: "and as wide"

Third Measurement: "and high"

Fourth Measurement: "as long."

Again, just my opinion!

Section Three: Part Three, Verses 17b-18:

Verses 17b -18, In these verses the 'angel' begins the process of 'measuring and describing' the "walls" of the city, (New Jerusalem) in verse (17b), He measured its wall and → it was 144,000 cubits (~200 feet) thick, → by man's measurement, → which the angel was using. (18) The wall was made of jasper, → and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass."

Verse 17b: "He measured its wall and → it was 144,000 cubits (~200 feet) thick, → by man's measurement, → which the angel was using. In this portion of verse 17b, God through John's words provides the reader with two specific pieces of information about the, size & method used in measuring the "walls" in the New Jerusalem:

First → Size: The angel states that the walls were, "...it was 144,000 cubits (~200 feet) thick..." To me this is just a straight forward statement of fact, about the specific dimension of the "walls". 'The angel measured the walls and reported his measurement'

Second → Method Used in Measuring: To me the second portion of this verse is also a 'statement of fact', where the angel states the specific materials of which the "walls" were constructed, which I think God put in to let the reader know that

the size should be taken as, 'literal', "...by man's measurement, which the angel was using."

Conclusion: God is simply providing the reader with 'specific dimensional numbers and measuring method' about the "walls" of the 'New Jerusalem'. I am not exactly sure why God provided us (saints) with such specific data about the New Jerusalem. Unless it was to let His saints know that He/God had given a lot of thought in providing His saints a 'Perfect Home for Eternity'.

Verse 18: "The wall was made of jasper, and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass." Greek Translator, "And the structure of its walls was jasper; → and the city was pure gold, → like pure glass." (I will use the Greek Translator translation, as I think it provides a better translation.) In verse 18, God appears to expand the information or facts about the "walls" of the New Jerusalem. Except this time He/God provides, what we would call 'A Visual Picture' of the "walls" of the 'New Jerusalem'. Also, keep in mind that God is using 'things from this creation' that men from all time periods would understand. To me this verse has three basic pieces of information, as follows:

One: In the first part of this verse God again makes a statement about the "walls" of the New Jerusalem; "And the structure (was made) of its walls was jasper..." To me God has made a statement of fact, that the walls are made of jasper. However, in this case I am not sure that God wants us to take the statement literally or figuratively? It appears to me that God's primary meaning in these words may be that He/God is trying to tell His Saints that their new home (New Jerusalem) is going to be beautiful and He/God is using something that men from all time periods would understand that is beautiful. The problem I have with taking this statement 'literally' is the in Rev. 21:1, God makes this statement, "...for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away...", therefore, the precious stone, "jasper" may not exist anymore. Also, the old precious stone, known as "jasper" would be 'sin tainted' and not allowed to be in the 'New Creation', Rev. 21:4b, "...for the old order of things had passed away."

Note: Also, keep in mind that God has already used the word "jasper" in verse 11, "It shown with the glory of God, and its brilliance was like that of a very

precious jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal.” (Keep in mind that God used the word **“like”** and **“clear as crystal”** in this verse). Also, the first foundation in Rev. 21:19 is said to be **“jasper”**, **“The first foundation was jasper...”** Again, just my opinion and additional food for thought!

Two: In the second part of this verse God makes another statement, except this time it is about the **‘Entire City—New Jerusalem’**: → **“...and the city was pure gold...”** (Again, I am not sure that God is talking ‘literally or figuratively’ in this statement, and all of the same questions apply as in # 1 above, which I will not repeat.) However, what we do know is that in this statement, God introduces a new word, **“pure”** which carries a **‘meaning of its own’**, **(free from weakness & pollutes: containing nothing that does not properly belong: free from moral fault or guilt)** To me, based on this one word **“pure”** it appears that God is telling the reader that, this **‘city—the New Jerusalem and Its Inhabitants—Saints → Is Free of Sin’** and for that matter, **‘Does Not Have the Ability to Sin, Any Longer’**.

I think the other word that God used is **“gold”** which is the most precious & valuable metal/stone on the earth, to men! Again, I am not sure if the city will actually be made of **“gold”** or something else. However, I am sure that God is trying to get across to His saints that He/God is going to provide a place for them to spend eternity → **‘That Will Be the Best Of the Best and That He/God has Spared No (?)’**.

Note: In Rev. 21:21b, God also tells us that the **“streets”** of the city are also defined as being made of **“gold”**, **“The streets of the city was of pure gold, like transparent glass.”** Also, notice the use of the words **“like transparent glass”**.

Three: In the third part of this verse God makes another statement, that is also about the **‘Entire City—New Jerusalem’**: → **“...like pure glass.”** Again, I believe that this portion of the verse carries all of the questions/issues in # 1 above plus the issues we talked about in #2. However, this time God also introduces the word **“like”** which, as we know, carries its own implications. Again, not many scholars discuss this statement, so I will give you my opinion, as follows:

- 1) First, God uses the word “like” so we know what He/God is describing is not the ‘actual item’ → “glass”.
- 2) Second, God uses the word “pure”, which we discussed in # 2 above, so I will not repeat.
- 3) Third, God uses the word, “glass”, (meaning—transparent or translucent—clear) Remember the entire statement, “...and the city was pure gold, → like pure glass.” We are talking about: ‘What the entire city—the New Jerusalem is made off’! Again, I am not exactly sure what God is trying to tell us, except:
 - a) The city is ‘beautiful’, “jasper & gold” and
 - b) The city & its inhabitants are “pure” and there is ‘No Deceit or Lies’,
 - c) Because Everything is “glass”, (transparent or translucent—clear). It appears to me that this last one could be based on many biblical concept that: 1) God knows & sees everything, 2) Nothing can be hidden for the Trinity, 3) In Re. 21:23, “The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is it’s lamp.” Therefore, everything would need to be transparent, to allow the light to shine in!. Again, just my opinion.

Section Three: Part Three, Verses 19-20:

Keep in mind that in verse 18, God just described specific attributes about the “walls” of the New Jerusalem and now in Verses 19-20, God shifts subjects and now begins to describes for the reader the ‘12 Foundation of the cities walls—an Correlates each of the ‘foundations’ to a ‘precious stone’. Verse 19, “The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. → The first foundation was jasper, → the second sapphire, → the third chalcedony, → the fourth emerald, (verse20) → the fifth sardonyx, → the sixth carnelian, → the seventh chrysolite, → the eighth beryl, → the ninth topaz, → the tenth chrysoprase, → the eleventh jacinth, → and the twelfth amethyst.” I am not sure why God began describing the “walls” first and not the “foundations of the walls”, but I am sure He had His reasons. As we go through each of the “foundations”, keep in mind that there will be both ‘Old & New

Testament Implications'. I will break these verses down into 13 topics to make them easier to cover.

Topic One: In the first part of verse 19, God makes what, I believe to be, a blanket statement, to put the reader on notice as to what the subject, to follow, will be:

First Statement: "The foundations..." and then let the reader know that these specific "foundations" are "... of the city walls", (meaning the city is the New Jerusalem).

Second Statement: "...were decorated with every kind of precious stone." To me in the second part of this opening sentence of verse 19, God informs the reader that 'Even the "foundation" of the New Jerusalem' will be: first: made of something valuable and second: made of something 'Beautiful'.

As I said before it appears that a lot of this scripture has 'Old Testament Implication'. Most scholars believe that the 'stones' listed in verse 19-20 are the same 'Precious Stones' used in the 'Breast Plate of the High Priest', Ex.28:17-21 & Ex. 39:10-14. However, because the Old Testament was written in Hebrew and the New Testament in Greek and the translation differences there appears to be several differences. This appears to be because; different words were used for the same stone in the two languages and also in different areas different names were used to identify a specific stone and by different writers—interpretations. I will list for you some of the major translations. There is also the issue of the "row" that you are talking about in the 'Breast Plate', vs. the 'Number of the Foundations' issue. Also, I have underlined the ones that matches.

NIV-Ex. 28:17-21 Greek Tran. Ex. 28:17-21 NIV-Rev. 21:19-21

← ROWS → ← Foundations →

← ROW ONE →

Stone One: Ruby Sardius Jasper

Stone Two: Topaz Topaz Sapphire

were the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.” So how does all of these verse correlate: Remember back in verse 14 we analyzed the words in Eph. 2:19-22, and I said that I thought that God through Paul’s words was giving His saints some insight as to how all of this would work out in Eternity. Again, it is my opinion that Eph. 2:19-22 pulls all of these **‘Old & New Testament Implication’** together and makes them understandable by men on this side of death, Eph. 2:19-22, **“Consequently, you (the church) are no longer foreigners and aliens, (past tense) but fellow citizens (now part of Gods people) with God’s people (Israel/Jews) and members of God’s household, (one group) built on the foundation of the apostles (New Testament—Church) and prophets (Old Testament—Israel/Jews), with Jesus Christ Himself as the chief cornerstone . (the Lamb that paid for all of our sins) In Him (Jesus) the whole building is joined together (meaning all of God/Jesus saints) and raise to become a Holy Temple in the Lord. (?) And in Him (Jesus) you to are being built together (joining or becoming one people) to become a dwelling in which God lives by His Spirit.”** Therefore, based on all of these scriptures, I believe that God is telling all of His saints that at some point in the **FUTURE (The New Creation)** that all of these separate groups **(Old & New Testament Saints, Plus All Others will become ONE PEOPLE)**. However, I think you need to read and study and then make up your own mind. Also, it does not make any real difference as the intent of the **‘description of the foundations of the New Jerusalem’** is to demonstrate **‘beauty & value for its inhabitants—the bride-church’**.

Last, I think it is again, interesting that God continues to tie the entire Bible together—front to rear; **Only the God of Creation could do this.**

There is not a lot written about each of the **‘stones’**, so I will provide the basic information that I could find on each, as follows:

Topic Two, First Stone: **“The first foundation was jasper...”** Its color is **‘crystal clear’**, most likely a diamond.

Topic Three, Second Stone: **“...the second sapphire...”** Its color has been primarily defined as, **‘blue’**, but others defined it as, opaque with gold specks. However, Exodus 24:9-10 describes it this way, NIV, **“Moses and Aaron, Nadab**

and Abihu, and the seventy elders of Israel went up and saw the God of Israel. Under His feet was something like pavement made of sapphire, clear as the sky itself.” Also, Greek Translator, “And Moses and Aaron went up with Nadab and Abihu, and seventy from the elders of Israel. And they saw the God of Israel. And under His feet was as the work of a pavement of sapphire, and as the heavens for cleanness.” Not sure what the correct answer really is, but it appears to me that God is telling us that **‘something is PURE & CLEAN’**. Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own minds.

Topic Four, Third Stone: “...the third chalcedony...” Its color has been primarily defined as **‘greenish’**, Webster Dictionary: a fine-grained variegated chalcedony having its colors arranged in stripes, blended in clouds, or showing moss-like forms. I like this one best, ‘best visual picture’: **‘a colored toy marble resembling a banded gemstone’**.

Topic Five, Forth Stone: “...the fourth emerald...” The color is **‘green’**. And **‘emerald’** is actually one of the stones used in Ezekiel 28;11-19 to describe Satan. In Rev. 4:3, and **‘emerald’** is also used to describe the ‘Throne Room of God’.

Topic Six, Fifth Stone: “...the fifth sardonyx...” The color has been primarily defined as **‘red’**. However, there are some who believe that it was ‘white with layers of red’. This appears to be the only verse in the Bible that uses the word **‘sardonyx’**. Basic meaning, ‘a species of the carnelian combining the sard and the onyx, having three layers of opaque spots or strips on a transparent red base.’

Topic Seven, Sixth Stone: NIV, “...the sixth carnelian...” the Greek Translator and KJV translation both, translate “...the sixth stone...” as, **“Sardius”**. Therefore, I will use the word **“Sardius”**. Sardius is defined as a red precious stone, probably ruby or carnelian, see KJV, Ex. 28:17, breast plate of the High Priest, ‘first row—first stone’.

Topic Eight, Seventh Stone: “...the seventh chrysolite...” The color has been primarily defined as **‘golden yellow’**. Again, this stone was used in the ‘breast plate of the high priest’, Ex. 28:20—fourth row, first stone. It is also used in

Ezekiel to describe the **“living creatures/wheels”** around God in heaven, Ezekiel chapter 1:16 & 10:9. Also, this stone was used to describe the angel in Daniels vision along the river, Daniel Chapter 10.

Topic Nine, Eighth Stone: **“...the eighth beryl...”** The color has been primarily defined as **‘green’**. Some classify it as being similar to an **‘emerald’**. Again, this stone was used in the **‘breast plate of the high priest’**, Ex. 28:17—first row, third stone. It is also one of the stones used in, Ezekiel 28:13, to describe the **‘beauty of Satan—before his fall’**.

Topic Ten, Ninth Stone: **“...the ninth topaz...”** The color has been primarily defined as **‘greenish yellow’**. Some classify it as a **‘golden greenish’**. Again, this stone was used in the **‘breast plate of the high priest’**, Ex. 28:17—first row, second stone. In Job 28:19, the **‘topaz’** is used to compare the value of **“wisdom”** to a **‘precious stone-topaz’**.

Topic Eleven, Tenth Stone: **“...the tenth chrysoprase...”** The color has been primarily defined as **‘gold green’**. Some classify it as a **‘sea green’**. If you go back to our chart of stone you will find that the NIV translation in Rev. 21:19-20 is the only place where this word is used.

Topic Twelve, Eleventh Stone: **“...the eleventh jacinth...”** The color has been primarily defined as **‘violet’**. Again, this stone was used in the **‘breast plate of the high priest’**, Ex. 28:19—third row, first stone. Also, in Rev.9:17, using the KJV. This stone is also used in many translations to describe something that has a **‘dark blue color’**, Rev.9:17.

Topic Thirteenth, Twelfth Stone: **“...and the twelfth amethyst.”** The color has been primarily defined as **‘purple’**. However, some classify it like a **‘ruby’**. Again, this stone was used in the **‘breast plate of the high priest’**, Ex. 28:19—third row, third stone. It is also used again in Exodus 39:12 to describe the same thing.

Summary:

To me in verses 19-20, God has provided the reader with a very vivid mental picture of the **‘12 Foundation of the cities walls—an Correlates each of the**

'foundations' to a 'precious stone'. However, to me all of this, **'Vivid and detailed description was Gods way of telling His Saints'** that – **'Their Home in Eternity will be BEAUTIFUL'**. And as I have said before, I think God makes these kind of statements, to assure 'His Saints (while they are still living on this – sin-filled earth) that He/God will keep His word as to the → 'Condition that He/God will create for His saints, in which they will spend Eternity, as well as, → What it will Look Like → For their Stead-fast Loyalty, while on this sin-filled earth'. Rev. 21:6-7, **"He said to me, 'It is done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who is thirsty I will give to drink without cost from the spring of the water of life. He who overcome will inherit all of this, and I will be his God and he will be My son."**

Section Three: Part Four, Verse 21:

"The twelve gates were twelve pearls, → each gate made of a single pearl. → The street of the city was of pure gold, → like transparent glass." In verse 21 God makes two additional statements about the 'physical characteristics of the New Jerusalem'. Also, I think it is also interesting how God makes a statement and then follows it up with an additional piece of information about what He/God just said.

Verse 21a: In verse 21a, God complete His description of the **"gates"** in the New Jerusalem. **"The twelve gates were twelve pearls, → each gate made of a single pearl."** To me verse 21a provides the reader with three specific pieces of information, as follows:

One: First, to me verse 21a should be viewed as a continuation of verses 12-13, **"It had a great, high wall with twelve gates, and with twelve angels at the gates. On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel. There were three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south and three on the west."** It appears that God begins verse 21a by repeating for the reader the number of **"gates"** in the New Jerusalem — **"twelve"**. Not sure why God skipped from verse 12 to 21a to complete His coverage of this same subject but He did.

Also, verse 21a starts by re-stating the number **“twelve gates”** which I believe he did to tie these two verses together, into one thought process. Just my opinion.

Two: Next God tells the reader, **‘What the Gates are made of’, “The twelve gates were twelve pearls...”** Again, God uses a word that would transcend time to describe the **‘Gates of the New Jerusalem’**. And, again, the words that He/God used is that of a **‘precious stone—something of great value’** just as He/God has done throughout this chapter. Also, there have been many scholars, throughout time, that have argued if these words should be taken **‘literally or figuratively’**. However, I think the issue is irrelevant, as anything in the New Creation will not be of the Old Creation, Rev. 21:1, **“Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away.”** Again, it appears that God is using words that would be used by humans of this creation and that they would understand, to describe, **‘great beauty’**, when He/God is describe the **‘New Home: He/God is Creating for His Saints’**. However, I do think God used a **“pearl”** to describe this **“gate”** because it would allow light to pass through, Rev. 21:23, **“The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”** **Note:** Also, notice that the **‘streets are transparent’**.

Three: Last, God provides the reader with additional details/information about the **“gate—pearl”**, which is, **“...each gate made of a single pearl...”**. I am not sure why God is making the point that, **“...each gate made of a single pearl...”** unless it is to impress upon the reader that the words we are reading are coming from the **‘God of Creation’** as He/God is the only one who could do such things; in this creation or the next! Again, read and make up your own mind.

Four: Also, to me this statement brings up a lot of interesting questions, like:

First Question: If the city is a 1,500 mile cube, are the **‘gates-pearls’** also 1,500 mile high?

Second Question: If the **‘walls’** are 200 feet thick, are the **‘gate-pearls’** also 200 feet thick?

Third Question: God, Where did you get such a big, big, big Pearl? Just joking.

Again, what I believe God is describing for the reader in these verses, is nothing from this creation, and could only be produced—made by **'The One and Only God → THE God OF ALL CREATIONS'**.

Verse 21b: And in the second part 21b, God begins His description of the **"streets"** in the New Jerusalem. **"The street of the city was of pure gold, → like transparent glass."** To me verse 21b, again provides the reader with three pieces of information, about the **"streets"** of the New Jerusalem, as follows:

One: I believe that God is making a point by, 'His/Gods use of the word **"street"** in the singular form'. The Greek Translator also uses the 'singular form'. God also uses the word **"street"** in Rev. 22:1-2a, **"Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, → as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb → down the middle of the great street of the city."** And again, **"street"** is used in the 'singular form in this verse as well'. It appears to me that God is telling the reader; 'That the New Jerusalem only has One Street', which would be very difficult for humans to understand, based on our current physics → Given we are talking about a city that is a 1,500 mile 'Cube'. However, as I have said before, I believe that the descriptions that God is providing us, the reader, in Revelation Chapter 21 & 22 about the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem are just 'word pictures' that we can understand today, (in our current physical dimension) and are in no way describing: 'the real → beauty and perfection and purity and holiness' that will exist in this 'New Creation', because **'As of This Point in Creation—God has Not Created Anything Like, This New Creation'**, therefore, we have **'No Current Words That Would Describe—This New Creation'**. Also, I think it is interesting that God has combined the two concepts of the only: **"street"** and **the water of life"** together, Rev. 22:1-2. I am not exactly sure what, if anything, this means but it appears to me to say that: 'The path or **"street"** (and there is only one path to God, which is through Jesus Christ), that we (saints) can take (which is Repentance/Obedience; then following Jesus's commands), that will/has lead us (saints) to **"the water of life"**. Again, just my opinion, but it sure fits many of the Biblical Concepts, from the beginning to the end of the Bible.

Two: In the second portion of this section, God tells us that the “street” is made of “Pure gold”. Again, God uses a words that would transcends time to describe the “street”, ‘Of the New Jerusalem’. And, again, the words He/God uses is that of a ‘precious metal—stone or something that all humans would think had great value’ just as He/God has done throughout this chapter. Again, it appears to me that God is telling the reader that He/God is going to create a ‘Home for His Saints’ that is ‘Beautiful—Perfect in Every Way—Holy and Pure’.

NOTE: However, keep in mind when reading the description of the New Jerusalem; meaning, all that we have been talking about up until now → is only the ‘Secondary Point—a visual Mental Picture’ about the New Jerusalem.

REMEMBER → The Primary Use of the New Jerusalem → will be; ‘The Temple of God and the Lamb’ And again, the secondary use will be ‘The Home of God and the Lamb’s Saints → which will be Their (God and the Lamb’s) Priest—and There To Serve Them (God & the Lamb), Forever!’ Rev. 21:22, “I did not see a temple I the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple”. We will get into this subject, a lot more at the end of chapter 21 & all of chapter 22.

Three: Next, God tells the reader that the “street” are “...like transparent glass.” However, as I said above when we were talking about the “pearl” being used as a “gate”. Many scholars believe that one of the reasons was because it would allow light to pass through, Rev. 21:23, “The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.” Therefore, it would appear that by God using the words “...like transparent glass.” to describe the “street”, meaning light could shine through the “street”, these scholars were correct in their assumption about the “pearl”. Also, notice that God used the word “like” in His description, which to me means that what John was seeing; something that functioned similar to “transparent glass” but was actually something else—**not yet created.** **Note:** Always keep in mind when reading this type of scripture, all of it is written and interpreted by men and is only their best guess at what will actually ‘be’, because nothing like this exist today.

Section Four, 'Spiritual/Physical Attributes for Gods Saints:

In verse 22-27 (the last part of chapter 21) it appears to me, that God has again shifted gears and begins to provide the reader with some of the **'Spiritual and Physical Attributes'** that will be provided by God, to those who will **'Reside in the New Jerusalem'**, which will be: **God the Father → God the Son → God the Holy Spirit AND Their Priest (church)—which will be their HOME for Eternity).**

However, I am sure that all of the other saints, who will be residing on the New Earth and → angelic beings that be will residing in the New Heaven, will also share in these benefits.

It appears to me that God broke these verses down in to three basic sub-sets, as follows:

ONE: Verses 22-23, provides the reader with some of → **'What Part God and the Lamb will Play in the New Jerusalem or we could say; What They will Provide'**, (verse 22) **"I did not see a temple in the city, → because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. (verse 23) The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, → for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."**

TWO: Verse 24-26, begins to provides the reader with the → **'Basic Relationship That Will Exist — Between God, the Lamb, the Holy Spirit and the Inhabitants — of the New Earth'**, (verse 24) **The nations will walk by its light, → and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it. (verse 25) On no day will the gates ever be shut, → for there will be no night there. (verse 26) The glory and honor of the nations will be brought into it."** **Note:** These two verses appear to only focus on the relationship between **'The Trinity'** and the saints that will reside on the New earth. There is no mention of the relationship that will exist between **'The Trinity'** and the angelic beings that will be in the New Heaven.

THREE: Verse 27, provides the reader with → **'The 'One & Only' Requirements, to Be an Inhabitants or be able to enter the New Jerusalem/New Earth & Heaven. However, there are also some 'Attributes Listed that will keep you out of the New Earth—Heaven—New Jerusalem'.** (verse 27) **"Nothing impure will**

ever enter it, → nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, → but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life."

Before, we begin our detailed study of these verses (22-27) I think is worth noting that it appears that this last section pulls together the first three sections of Revelation Chapter 21. To me it appears that God began this chapter by providing the reader with the 'basic facts' about the 'New Jerusalem' and then continued the chapter by providing additional descriptions that would cause 'His Saints' to get more & more excited about their 'New Eternal Home'. It also appears that Revelation Chapter 22 continues this process of: 'God Explaining to His Saints— How He/God will be Implementing All of the Promises He made to His Saints – in the Bible'.

Note 1: To me the two most important verses in these two chapters are: Rev. 21:3, "And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, 'Now the dwelling of God is with men, and He will live with them. They will be His people, and God Himself will be with them and be their God.'" This same concept is explained, in a little different way in Rev. 22:3b-4, "The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in the city, and His servants (the church) will serve Him. They will see His face, and His name will be on their forehead (remember the issue of being sealed).'"

Note 2: We have seen God use this issue of "sealing" throughout the scripture to 'Protect His Own', from 'His Wrath—Judgement'. I will list four examples of God "sealing", 'people or things':

First: Exodus Chapters 11 & 12, the 'Passover',

Second: Ezekiel Chapter 9, 'The idolaters Killed',

Third: Revelations Chapter 7:1-8, 'Sealing the 144,000 Jewish Evangelist',

Fifth: Revelation 9:4, "...but only those people who did not have the seal of God on their foreheads."

[Revelation Chapter 21—Re-Cap:](#)

[Section One, Statement of Facts—About the New & Old Creation: Verses 1-6:](#)

In verse 1, God appears to be making a **‘Statement of Fact’** about **‘What Happened to the Old Creation’**.

In verse 2-4, it appears God is providing the reader with brief glimpse at the **‘New Jerusalem’** and some of the **‘Characteristics & Attributes’** that His Saints will receive in the **‘New Heaven, earth & Jerusalem’**.

In verse 5-6a, I think God is again, **‘Making a Statement of Fact’**, about:

- 1) **‘The New Creation’**: verse 5a,
- 2) **‘The Old Creation is Gone’**: verses 5b-6a,
- 3) **‘One Last Benefit of the New Creation’**: verse 6b

[Section Two, What Will Determine Who is a: Residences of Heaven or the Lake of Burning Fire – Defined: Verses 7-8:](#)

1) **‘How He/God will Determine Who Gets into the New Heaven, Earth & Jerusalem’**: verses 7;

2) And also, **Conformation** of: If you are not **‘Saved—A Child of God’**: **Where You Will Go, And → What This Will Mean to Tis Second Group’**: verse 8.

Section Three, “Characteristics & Physical Description of the New Jerusalem’: **Verses 9-21**: In verse 9-21 it appears that God is providing the reader with some of the **‘Characteristics or Physical Descriptions’** of the **‘New Jerusalem’**. Also, these words provide the reader with many implications & references to **‘Pervious Things—Imagery from the Old Creation’**.

It also appears that God, through Johns words is beginning to provide the reader with a glimpse at → What the **‘administrated/social physical structure’** will be in the **‘New Creation’**. It appears to me that Revelation Chapter 22, fills in a lot more details about this structure, as well as, God’s position, as it relates to His **‘human**

created beings', in this structure. **Note:** How the angels (the 2/3 remaining loyal angels) will fit into to this structure is not clearly defined.

Begin Section Four:

Section Four, Part One:

In verses 22-23, provides the reader with some of → **'What Part God and the Lamb will Play in the New Jerusalem'**, (verse 22) **"I did not see a temple in the city, → because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. (verse 23) The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, → for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."**

First Part of Verse 22: **"I did not see a temple in the city..."** John in part one of verse 22 makes, what I call a **'statement of fact'** and the reason this statement is so important because: **This statement reveals a new piece of information that would be considered 'unusual' in the first creation.**

Note: To me the temple should be considered the **'Home or Dwelling Place of God, Among Men'**. This process began shortly after Israel's exodus from Egypt. It began with Moses setting up a tent just outside of the camp, which is where God would meet with him, Ex. 33:7, **"Now Moses used to take a tent and pitch it outside of the camp some distance away, calling it the, 'tent of meetings'. Anyone inquiring of the Lord would go to the tent of meeting outside the camp. And when ever Moses went out to the tent, all the people rose and stood at the entrance to their tents, watching Moses until he entered the tent. As Moses went into the tent, a pillar of cloud would come down and stay at the entrance, while the Lord spoke with Moses."** This process became more formalized when God gave the Israelites the plans for, the **'tabernacle'**, Ex. 25:8-9, **"Then have them make a sanctuary for Me, and I will dwell among them. Make this tabernacle and all of its furnishings exactly like the pattern I will show you."** I do not think there is any question that God designed the tabernacle so that it would be **'moveable'** because the Israelites had not yet reached their permanent **'Home Land'**. However, when Israel reached its **'Home Land'**, God then required that they build **'Him a permanent structure, which was called the Temple'**. King

Solomon built the first temple, which is recorded in, 1 Kings Chapter 6. Keep in mind when thinking about this statement, that we said in our analysis of verse 2, that the word **“city”** is equated to its people, in this case the church, and it will also be the **‘Home of God and the Lamb’**, because it will be where they (**God and the Lamb**) will live among the saints → there will no longer be any separation between God and man—just like it was in the **‘Garden of Eden’**.

Note: I think what we are seeing is, **‘God’s Cycle of Perfection for Those Who Love Him’**.

Additional Details About the Temple:

The first temple was built by Solomon, however, that Temple was destroyed by the Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar.

The Second Temple that Zerubbabel re-built (Nehemiah began the work of rebuilding the walls of Jerusalem in 537-6 BC. The Temple itself was finished in 515 BC.) was desecrated by King Epiphanes in 168 BCE.

The ‘Third Temple’: The ‘Second Temple’ that was desecrated by King Epiphanes in 168 BC was torn down by Herod the Great and then rebuilt in 18/17 BC. This is the Temple mentioned to Jesus in John 2:20. Construction continued on Herod's Temple till 64 AD. Herod's Temple was then destroyed by Roman General Titus in 70 AD, and never rebuilt.

The ‘Forth Temple’ will be rebuilt sometimes during the first half of the ‘Seven Year Tribulation Period’, 2 Thess. 2:4, **“He opposes and exalts himself over everything that is called God or is worshiped, and even sets himself up in God’s temple proclaiming himself to be God.”**

Note: It is unclear exactly, what will happen during Jesus millennial reign → will the temple be rebuilt or not?

The Fifth Temple, will actually be, **‘The City, Known as the New Jerusalem’** and not of this creation It will be **‘Created by God’** → **‘All New and Free of Sin or Even the Ability to Sin’**.

Conclusion:

Again, John states; **“I did not see a temple in the city...”** and the reason was—**‘The City was the Temple’**.

Second part of Verse 22: **“...because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple.”** To me God in the second part of this verse clearly states; Why there was no **‘Physical Temple, in the New Jerusalem’**. Keep in mind that Revelation Chapters 21 & 22 are describing/talking about **‘A New Creation’**; one where **‘sin’** no longer exist, nor can exist and one where man has been **‘Permanently Reconciled Back to God’** → Therefore, they (God & Man) can co-exist in the same place/dimension. Again, just like it was in the Garden of Eden.

I do not know what else to say about these words, except, **‘This will be the Greatest Moment in Every Saved Persons Existence & It Will Last for All of Eternity’**.

Verse 23—All: **“The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, → for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”** In this next verse, I think God begins to provide a **‘mental word picture’** for the reader; where He/God compares the **‘sun & moon of this creation’**, (which is where we get the **“light”** that we need to live (physically see, [work, move from place to place, and enjoy the beauty of creation] & even grown the food we eat) to **“...the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”**, which is where we will get the **“light”** that we need to see, in the **‘New Creation’**. I am sure that we all understand these words but I am also sure that no one can truly imagine or understand the real implications of, **‘What the New Creation will Actually Look Like, given → It does not exist yet!’**

Note: I am not sure why but God repeats this concept again in Revelation Chapter 22, verse 5, **“There will be no more night. → They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, → for the Lord God will give them light. → And they will reign for ever and ever.”** However, it appears that God adds a few more details about → How this process will work!

It also appears to me that this verse would have **'Spiritual Implications'**, as scripture tells us the Jesus was the **"light"** to the world, in this first creation, John 8:12 **"When Jesus spoke again to the people, he said, "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness, but will have the light of life."**

John 9:5 **"While I am in the world, I am the light of the world."**

John 12:35-37 **"Then Jesus told them, "You are going to have the light just a little while longer. Walk while you have the light, before darkness overtakes you. Whoever walks in the dark does not know where they are going. ³⁶Believe in the light while you have the light, so that you may become children of light." When he had finished speaking, Jesus left and hid himself from them. ³⁷Even after Jesus had performed so many signs in their presence, they still would not believe in him."**

Conclusion:

I think God is giving us words about this creation that we can currently understand and then comparing them to the New Creation, as well as, making a reference back to the words of Jesus in the New Testament. Only the God of Creation could compose this type of a document – the Holy Bible.

Section Four, Part Two:

In Verses 24-26, God begins to provides the reader with the → **'Basic Relationship That Will Exist—Between God, the Lamb, the Holy Spirit and the Inhabitants of the New Earth'**, (verse 24) **"The nations** (meaning, the individual saved people of the nation) **will walk by its light** (meaning, God & the Lamb → the New Jerusalem) → **and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it.** (meaning—unclear, but could have something to do with—worship & praise) (verse 25) **On no day will the gates ever be shut,** → **for there will be no night there.** (verse 26) **The glory and honor of the nations** (meaning, the individual saved people of the nation) **will be brought into it."** (again, meaning unclear)

First Part of Verse 24: **"The nations** (people) **will walk by its light..."** (meaning, God & the Lamb → the New Jerusalem) First, before we begin, I think we need to take note of the fact that God again shifts gears and begins talking about

something other than the description of the New Jerusalem and the relationship that God and the Lambs have to its inhabitants. God now begins to define the relationship that will exist between, **'The Trinity'** and the saints that will be living on the New earth → notice the new word **"nations"**.

Also, it appears to me that in the first part of verse 24, God adds additional details about what He just said in verse 23 about the issue of **"light"**. Except this time His/Gods statement appears to include not only the New Jerusalem but also the New Earth, (see, note below) and I would assume the New Heaven, (My assumption about the New Heaven is based on the fact that God is already the light of the Old Heaven). Again just my opinion.

NOTE: Remember, back in verses 12-13, when we were talking about the **"twelve gates"** in the New Jerusalem; and the scripture said that the name of each tribe of Israel was on one of twelve gates. We also provided Old Testament scripture that described; How the twelve tribes were laid out around the 'tabernacle'. Therefore, as I have said before, it appears to me that:

- 1) 'The Church Saints will be the residents of the New Jerusalem (priest to God & the Lamb) and
- 2) 'All of Israel + All other Saved Humans (pre-Israel + Tribulation Saints? + People Saved During the Millennium) will be Residents of the New Earth'.
Again, this is just my opinion, but I do think God gives us a hint when He/God used the word **"nations"** in our verse. Remember, the new Jerusalem is not a 'nation' but the **'Home of God & the Lamb + Their Priest—the Church + the Capital City of All of the New Creation'**.
- 3) The third group would be the remaining 2/3 of the loyal angels, which I believe will reside in the New Heaven.

It also appears that God, in this verse, **"The nations (people) will walk by its (meaning the light..."** That is Coming From the New Jerusalem). Also, I think this verse is giving the reader several other pieces of information or hints about the New Creation:

ONE: Based on this word **“nations”** it appears that there will be actual **“nations”**, (made up of individual saved people) on the New Earth. However, we are not told: **If the word “nation”, really means anything, in terms of the way we think of a ‘Nation’.** Therefore, I think this word **“nations”** means something else (not some type of basic difference in people/saints) that we will not understand until we get to heaven. I base this on: **We know that we will all be → ‘Saved/Saints of God and the Lamb’** and **‘Children—Heir—Sons of God/Lamb’** and **‘Residents of the New Creation’**. Therefore, there must be, **‘Some Other Unknown Difference, that will differentiate the word “nations”’**. Or, God could just be using this word **“nations”** to provide the reader with a ‘mental word picture’ that we would understand. Primarily, to let us (saints) know that there will be some type of **‘Structure in the New Creation’ – yet to be revealed** → Because we would not understand it anyway—and **may scare some saints**. Remember, we are in the positive part of Revelations, where **‘All Saints’** should be very excited and happy, not scared. Rev. 21:4, **“He/God will wipe away ever tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or morning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away.”** Also, Just my opinion.

TWO: It also appears that the ‘saints’ will move around (travel throughout), the ‘New Creation’. At least from the New Earth to the New Jerusalem (see words at end of this verse). Notice that God also inserted the word **“walk”** in this verse, **“The nations will walk by its light...”** However, I would like to stress, that the ‘mental word picture’ that comes to our minds, as it relates to the word **“walk”** may not in fact be what will actually be happening in the New Creation. I think this could be very similar to the situation we had above with the word **“nations”**; the ‘mental word picture we get’ and how we interpreted that word, may not be ‘What Actually will Exist’? I think this word **“walk”** may indicate, some type of movement—from place to place. Just my opinion.

NOTE: My primary concern with taking the word **“walk”** literally—as we understand it, is that: The New Creation will come just after the Millennial Reign of Jesus and the saints (Church + Tribulation Saints + Resurrected Israel) that will help Jesus, rule during this 1,000 years and will all possess **‘Immortal Bodies’**, meaning that they will have **‘physical substance’** but will not be constrained by

'time or space or matter', like mortal humans will. Therefore, to me, if these saints had to go back to **"walking"** it would be a big step backwards. I am sure they would be happy to do it, to make God/Lamb Happy. However, based on what we know about **'Immortal Bodies'**, based on Jesus abilities after His resurrection → These specific saints will be able to **'Actually Walk'** or they will be able to **'Transverse Time & Space—At Will'**.

CONCLUSION: Based on all of our analysis, I believe the best way to interpret the word **"walk"** is that it means or indicates — **'some kind of movement by the saints, in the New Creation'**. Again, just my opinion.

THREE: The word **"light"** in this verse, for sure is referencing the same word **"light"** in verse 23, above, **"The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, → for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."** Therefore, we know for sure that we are talking about, what we would call **'Spiritual Light'**, however, it appears to me that we are probably talking about some other type of **'Light Form'**, → which is for sure unclear—at least to our current understanding, because currently we think of **'light'** as a means of seeing thing.

Second Part of Verse 24: **"...and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it."** To me God provides the reader with three pieces of information, as follows:

ONE: God in the last part of verse 24, opens up by providing the reader with more details about the fact that there will be **'Some Type of Ruling/Administrative Structure in the New Creation'** → **"kings"**. To me this should not be big news to the saints, because we know that God had very definitely organized the Old Heaven → Currently, we know that specific angels possess different levels of **'Power and Authority'**, which appears to be based on: **'What God Needs Them to Do for Him → What Their Job is'**. This concept of, **'What Their Job is'** would only apply to the 2/3 of the angels which did not fall, however, the 1/3 that did fall still have some **'Limited Power & Authority—Satan'**. Keep in mind that this, **'Limited Power & Authority'** is **'Limited by God in Both Actions & Time'**; see Revelation Chapters 12-13.

Again, I believe that God gave the reader this word **“kings”** so that we would be able to have a ‘mental word picture’ of some type of ‘structure’ in this New Creation. However, it is my opinion that it will not be the one that comes to our mind, (base on humanities current structure on the earth) when we hear the word **“king”**. Again, just my opinion.

TWO: The next word that jumps out is **“earth”**. **“...and the kings of the earth (New) will bring their splendor into it.”** This word has not been used since verse 1 of this chapter, **“Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven, and the first earth had passed away...”** In the 23 verses between these two verses, God has provided the reader with a lot of information primarily (all but one—verse 8) directed at describing the New Jerusalem—in one way or the other. Now in verse 24 God has begun talking about another part of the **New Creation—The New Earth** and some of what its relationship and its inhabitants relationships will be with the **‘New Jerusalem and its Inhabitants’**. And, again as I said above it appears that there will be some type of **‘organizational structure on the New Earth’**, based on these words, but I would not want to even guess at what it would look like—but I am sure: **‘Anything Done By God/Jesus will be ‘Wonderful and Good FOR Me’**.

NOTE: Based on scripture, we believe that the **‘New Earth’** will be populated by **Israel** (the twelve tribes—three to the North, East, West & South) and **‘All of the Other Pre-Church Saints’**, and **‘The Tribulation Saints’** and **‘The Millennium Saints’**. However, we are not given any indication of, what the layout of these groups will be (except Israel) or even; if there will be a structured layout. Again, it appears that there will be some type of structure, but it is not given.

THREE: Last, I know that God uses the word **“earth”** to describe the **‘New Earth’** and the first thing that come in to our mind is **‘dirt—rocks—earth’**, however, I do not think we should make this assumption. I wish I had a good description of what the **‘New Earth’** will look like and be like, but I do not—I only know it will be **‘Wonderful and Beautiful and Sin Free’**. The way I look at this word **“earth”** is that God is trying to tell His Saints (the ones that will reside on the New Earth) that He/God has prepared a **‘New Home for Them and It Will Perfect—Sin Free—**

For-Ever→ Eternity’. Rev. 22:3a, **“No longer will there be any curse.”** Again, just my opinion.

FOUR: And the last words that jumps out is, **“...and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it.”** Again, God is provides the reader with more detail about the **‘Actions of the Inhabitants of the New Earth’**, with a special focus on their **‘Relationship with God/Lamb & the New Jerusalem’**. I know what this verse says, or the **‘mental word picture’** that it paints, which I think indicates that the saints of the New Earth will bring their **‘tithes in to God/Lamb’** → **“splendor”**. However, given God and the Lamb will be providing for all of their needs (see chapter 22) it appears to me that this is talking about **‘their Love, their worship their praise, their thanks’** or something like that! At this point in time, men will be sin free, therefore, they will not covet things like we do today and God and the Lamb will be suppling their every need, so I do not believe that this word **“splendor”** is talking about what we would call today, something **‘Physical’**. Again, just my opinion.

The last words of this verse are, **“...into it.”** which is defining for the reader that the saints of the New Earth will **“walk”** (travel—move to) the New Jerusalem (based on some predetermined interval) to **bring their splendor...”** **‘their Love, their worship their praise, their thanks’** **“...into it.”** meaning the **New Jerusalem, the Home of God—the Lamb—the priest (church)**. This is the second time in this verse God uses the word, **“it-its”** to reference **‘The New Jerusalem’**. God will change the subject in verse 25, but return to this subject in verse 26 and uses the word **“it”** to again define **‘The New Jerusalem’**, except this time from the perspective of: **‘Where “its” light Comes From’**. We will discuss this more in our discussion of verse 26. Again, just my opinion—read and make up your own mind.

NOTE: There are some scholars who equate what Isaiah wrote in Isaiah Chapter 60 to this time period and they focus on verses 3 & 11, **“Nations will come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your dawn.”** And **“Your gates will always stand open, they will never be shut, day or night, so that men may bring you the wealth of the nations—their kings led in triumphal processions.”**

However, I believe that these verses in Isaiah are talking about the period known

as the **'Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ on Earth'**. I base this on the words in Zechariah Chapter 12-14, focusing on Zech. 14:16-17, **"Then the survivors from all the nations who have attacked Jerusalem will go up year after year to worship the King, the Lord Almighty, and to celebrate the Feast of Tabernacles. If any of the people of the earth do not go up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the Lord Almighty, they will have no rain."** Also, if you read all of Isaiah Chapter 60, you will find it is talking about the Jerusalem of this creation and not the **'Next Creation'**; **Example of Differences:** The first creation has a **"sea"** and the **'Second Creation'** does not have a **"sea"**. **Old Creation—Isaiah 60:5b, "...the wealth of the sea will be brought to you..."** **New Creation—Rev. 21:1, "Then I saw the new heaven and the new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no more sea."** Please read for yourself and then make up your own minds.

Verse 25: "On no day will the gates ever be shut, → for there will be no night there." In verse 25 God provides the reader with two additional pieces of information about the New Jerusalem. To me the **first** is, God talking about the **'ease of access/security in to the New Jerusalem'** and the **second** **'speaks about the change in the environment (between first and second Jerusalem) but specifically—that the Light of God and the Lamb will shine (verse 22a) → All the Time—What We Call 24/7'**. Also, I think that there is a **secondary meaning**, which is: **Nothing can be hidden from the light of God/Lamb.**

NOTE: There are some scholars who believe that this verse should be taken **'literally'**. And some that believe that it should be taken **'spiritually'**. Based on my understanding of all of Revelation Chapter 21, I would put my money on, both:

- 1) **I do not believe that anything that is in the 'Entire New Jerusalem, Earth & Heaven' will EVER be Shut Out of any part of this creation, nor will they (saints) be OUT of the LIGHT'**.
- 2) **I do not believe humans in today's form have the ability to understand, 'What Anything in the New Creation—Will 'Literally Look Like' because we have nothing to compare it to.**

3) The entire, 'New Creation', to me is based on 'The Spirit—God or Man', therefore, again, 'Humans, in their Current Form—I do not believe have the ability to Comprehend this Issue'. Again, read and make up your own mind.

First Part of Verse 25: "On no day will the gates ever be shut..." Again, to me the first part of this verse speaks to, (the mental word picture), 'ease of access and security to the New Jerusalem'. There are a lot of way that you can talk about this statement, so I will list some of the concepts/key verses that I think will provide us with a good mental picture of the , 'ease of access and security in to the New Jerusalem'.

One: My first thought was: These are the "gates" to the 'Home of God, the Lamb and Their Priest': However, 'In Reality' → 'No 'gates' are actually needed, given God is the only God and no other is greater—so why would the city even need 'gates'?

Two: My second thought was: I think God uses the word "gates" as a human 'mental word picture' so that the reader would know that there were passage ways into and out of the 'City—New Jerusalem'. **(Meaning, Open Access for All of God's Saints—To Come and Go—FREELY)** Remember, the New Jerusalem is the 'Temple/Home of God & the Lamb & Their Priest' and all others (all other saved humans & the 2/3 of the angels that did not fall) will commute between the 'New Earth & Heaven and the New Jerusalem', Rev. 21:24b, "...and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it."

Three: We have already been told that there will be an angel at every 'gate', Rev. 21:12, "It had a great high, walls with twelve gates, and with twelve angels at the gates." However, as I said when we talked about this verse, I believe that they will be there as a 'Welcoming Committee' and 'Not as Guards'.

Four: There are some scholars who believe that, 'the gates/angels' are there to protect the city. To me this does not make any sense as 'All Evil/Anything Against God' has been sent to the 'Burning Lake of Fire/Sulfur' for all of eternity and a

'Void has been placed between it and the New Heaven, Earth and Jerusalem'.

Again, this view does not appear to 'fit' with the overall Bible, that we know.

Second Part of Verse 25: **"...for there will be no night there."** It appears to me that there are two probable meaning to this portion of verse 25, as follows:

One: For whatever reason, God is re-stating what He/God just said in verse 23, **"The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp,"** Also, keep in mind when we studied verse 23, we stated, **'Jesus was the light of the world'**, in the first creation. Meaning—**'Spiritual Light'** in the first creation. However, in this creation it appears that these words may be talking about; something more—again not sure? We can discuss in class.

Two: Also, it appears to me that God put these words in a second time to add to or clarify the first part of this verse, **Part One: "On no day will the gates ever be shut..."** → **Part Two: "...for there will be no night there."** To me the way I read this verse is that God is stating that **'There will be no need to ever shut the gates to the city'**, because **'there will never be any night (with night meaning evil) to be protected from—in Gods New Creation'**. Again, to me the two parts read together seem to make the point that, **'God will not allow any evil to exist in His New Creation—Sin Free and even—Not Able to Sin—for all of eternity—pure and Holy'**.

Three: I think the other way that to define this statement, **"...for there will be no night there."** Is that in the New Creation, the bodies that the saints will have does not need; sleep to function. Remember this creation will not be constrained by our current physics → time, space & matter. Therefore, sleep may not be required.

Note: **Base on this, I think I know now why the apostles, from a human standpoint, stated; 'That They Wanted to Die and go to Heaven' → It appears that they had a much better understanding of just how wonderful → 'Their Next Life Was Going to be'!**

Verse 26: "The glory and honor of the nations (all of the saints, other than the church saints, which will be priest) → will be brought into it (the New Jerusalem)."
In verse 26 God again reverts back to primarily talking about the → 'Actions of the "nations",' which He/God began in verse 24b, "The nations will walk by its light, and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it (the New Jerusalem)."
Actually, verse 24 & 26 say almost the same thing.

Again, a quick re-cap of verses 23-26 is, as follows:

Verse 23: Primarily talks about: God and Jesus are the Light of the New Jerusalem. "The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, → for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."

Verse 24: Primarily talks about: The nations walking by the, light of the New Jerusalem (God/Lamb) and The kings/people bring their (praise, love etc.) in to the New Jerusalem. "The nations (all of the saints, other than the church saints, which will be priest) will walk by its (meaning, the light coming from the New Jerusalem) light, → and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it.

Verse 25: Talks about: The gates of the New Jerusalem will never be shut and There will never be any night. "On no day will the gates ever be shut, → for there will be no night there.

Verse 26: "The glory and honor of the nations (all of the saints, other than the church saints, which will be priest) → will be brought into it (the New Jerusalem)."

Begin verse 26 analysis:

I am not sure why God appears to repeat what He/God just said in the later portion of verse 24; "The nations (meaning, the individual saved people of the nation) will walk by its (meaning, the New Jerusalem) light, → and the kings of the earth will bring their splendor into it." Again, it appears to be to be saying almost the same thing, however God is using different words. Also, I

cannot find any scholars who even talk about this verse, so I will give you my opinion.

To try and provide us with a better understanding of **'Exactly What God is Telling Us'** I went to the **'Vines Concise Dictionary'** for Biblical definition of these words.

First Word, Verse 24: "splendor" In many cases **'hod'** focuses on **'dignity and splendor'** with overtones of **'superior power and position'**. The first occurrence of the word was in Num. 27:18-20, **"So the Lord said to Moses, 'Take Joshua son of Nun, a man in whom is the spirit and lay your hands on him. Have him stand before Eleazar the priest and the entire assembly and commission him in their presence. Give him some of your (hod → authority—honor—splendor) so the whole Israelite community will obey him'."** Also, when **'hod'** is used in the bible to describe the **'olive tree'** in Hos. 14:6b, and it again **'paints a mental picture of —splendor & dignity'**, **"His splendor will be like and olive tree, His fragrance like cedar of Lebanon."**

Second Word, Verse 26: "glory" There are numerous definitions or ways in which the word **"glory"** can be used so I will limit ours to; the context in which it is being used in this verse. The word represents **'beauty—ornament—distinction—pride or adornment'**—Ex. 28:2, **"Make sacred garments for your brother Aaron, to give him dignity (glory) and honor."** Also, I like Isa. 4:2, which is talking about some of Gods saints in Israel, (This is not the same event, but it sure describes it well), **"In that day the Branch of the Lord will be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the land will be the pride and glory of the survivors in Israel. Those who are left in Zion, who remain in Jerusalem, will be called holy, all who are recorded among the living in Jerusalem."** And, the word is used to denote one's rank: A crown of **'Glory'** is a crown, which by its richness indicates high rank, Prov. **"Gray hair is a crown of splendor (glory); it is attained by a righteous life."**

Third Word, Verse 26: "honor" Again, there are numerous definitions or ways in which the word **"honor"** can be used so I will limit ours to; the context in which it is being used in this verse. Vines Concise dictionary, provides us with several definiens: **'wealth—reputation (majesty) —positive reputation —**

importance – however, I think this one fits our verses best; **‘giving honor to God is a cultic recognition and confession of God as God’**, Ps. 29:1, **“Ascribe to the Lord, O mighty ones, ascribe to the Lord glory and strength. Ascribe to the Lord the glory due His name; worship the Lord in the splendor of His holiness.”** Again, it appears that our words are saying: **Ascribe to the Lord the glory due His name...”** based on the context of verses 24-26. Again, just my opinion.

Conclusion, Verse 26:

It appears to me that in verse 26, (and based on the context of verses 22-25) God was trying to tell the reader; **‘That All the Nations of the New Earth will → ‘Come in to the Temple of God—The New Jerusalem’ “...because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple (New Jerusalem).”** And to get there, they will walk (move) by the **‘Light, that will come from the New Jerusalem’, “...for the glory of God gives it (New Jerusalem) light and the lamb is its lamp.”** And **‘All of the Nations’ will bring in to the New Jerusalem there’:**

- 1) **“splendor”** → ‘dignity and splendor’ with overtones of ‘superior power and position’,
- 2) **“glory”** → **‘beauty—ornament—distinction—pride or adornment’**
- 3) **“honor”** → **‘giving honor to God is a cultic recognition and confession of God as God’**

And when they get there, they will place all of this at Gods and Lambs feet and **‘Worship & Praise Then Forever’**. Again, what I think we are seeing is → **‘A Grateful People, Worshiping Their God/Savior → Because of His Love for Them and What he has Done for Them’**. Last, were not told, what this worship will entail; **frankly, because I do not think that we would understand it anyway—in our current ‘sin-nature—form’**. Again, just my opinion—read and make up your own minds.

Section Four, Part Three:

Verse 27, provides the reader with → **'The 'One & Only' Requirements, to Be an Inhabitants or be able to enter the New Jerusalem/New Earth & Heaven.**

However, there are also some 'Attributes Listed that will keep you out of the New Earth—Heaven—New Jerusalem'. (verse 27) "Nothing impure will ever enter it, → nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, → but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life." Greek Translator, **"And all profaning may not at all enter into it, or any making an abomination or a lie; but only the ones having been written in the scroll of Life of the Lamb."**

In this chapter God has already presented this type of information before in (verses 6-8), except in verse 6-8 God presents the **'Positive Side First'** and then the **'Negative Side'**. However, in our verse, God begins the verse with the **'Negative side of the verse'** and then moves to the **'Positive side of the verse'**. Again, not sure why, unless He/God wanted to end the verse/chapter on the positive side. Also, keep in mind that this chapter is primarily written to the **'saints'** of the New Creation and not the unsaved.

Verse 27, starts out by making two statements about three separate sins that will keep you out of the **'New Jerusalem—Temple of God/Lamb'** and I would assume the **'New Earth & Heaven'**.

Verse 27 Part One: **"Nothing (1) impure will ever enter it (New Jerusalem) , → nor will anyone who does what is (2) shameful (3) or deceitful,..."** Also, Greek Translator, **"And all (1) profaning may not at all enter into it (New Jerusalem) , or any making (2) an abomination or (3) a lie..."**

First Sin Listed: **"impure"** or **"profaning"**

Webster's defines **"impure"** as follows: **'containing something unclean'** and **'mixed or impregnated with and inferior substance—(Like Unrepentant Sin)'**.

Webster's defines **"profaning"** as follows: **'to treat something that I sacred with abuse or irreverent or with contempt'** or **'serving to debase defile what is Holy'**.

Based on these definitions, of these two words, it appears that God is saying –
ONE: **“Nothing (meaning, anything that exist—in the first creation) or “And all (meaning, every member or individual of the first creation)**

TWO: **“...impure...” (meaning, ‘containing something unclean’ and ‘mixed or impregnated with and inferior substance—(Like Unrepentant Sin)’.** or
“...Profaning...” (meaning, ‘to treat something that I sacred with abuse or irreverent or with contempt’ or ‘serving to debase defile what is Holy’.)

THREE: **“...Will ever enter it...” (The New Jerusalem) ,** or **“...may not at all enter into it...” (The New Jerusalem)**

Second Sin Listed: **“...shameful...”** or **“...any making an abomination...”**

Webster’s defines, **“...shame-full...”** as, follows: **‘a painful emotion caused by consciousness of guilt’**

Vines Concise Dictionary defines, **“abomination”** as follows: **‘a loathsome or a detestable thing’** I think Prov. 29:27, brings crystal clarity to what God was trying to say, when He used this word; **“abomination”**, and especially at this point in the chapter, Hebrew Translator; Prov. 29:27, **“An unjust man is an abomination to the righteous: → and the upright of way are an abomination to the wicked.”**

NIV, **“The righteous detest the dishonest; the wicked detest the upright.”**

Also, if we look at the book of Matthew, chapter 24, where he is describing some of the **‘Prophetic Signs Leading Up to the End Times Period’**, verse 15, we can see how Jesus used this word, **“So when you see standing in the Holy place, ‘the abomination that causes desolation’, (antichrist/Satan) spoken of by the prophet Daniel...”** (Dan. 9:27 &11:31 &12:11) Remember, this was Jesus speaking these words.

Again, it appears to me that God is: **‘making it very clear, (to all of humanity), by using, everyday/common human words, that → The Unsaved do not have anything in common with the saved—at this point in time/creation’. **They will be separated for all of Eternity.****

Third Sin Listed: “...or deceitful...” or “...or any making -- a lie...”

Before we begin our detailed analysis I would like to say: I do not know exactly how God worked this out; but to end the chapter with these words “...deceitful...” and “...a lie...” is; What I would call → the **‘Specific Words’** that would most clearly **‘Define’** → **‘How Satan Attacks Each Human’** (Starting with Adam & Eve until the last person is born) and also, **‘Clearly Defines the Process that Each Human Goes Through—In Their Individual Fall—Separation From God’**. Again, to me this is a **‘Master Piece – of God’**.

Vine’s Concise Dictionary defines “deceitful” as, **‘that which gives a false impression, whether by appearance, statement or influence’**. There are many scripture passages that use this concept, but I still like the one in Genesis, where Satan is **‘deceiving Eve and then Eve ‘deceives’ Adam’**, Genesis Chapter 3, focus on verse 4, “You will not surely die, the serpent said to the woman...” Also, remember that what Satan did to Eve was an out-right “lie” and Satan knew it was a “lie”.

Verse 27 Part Two: “...but only those → whose names are written in the Lamb’s book of life.” Greek Translator, , “...but only the ones having been written in the scroll of Life of the Lamb.” Either translation is good so I will use the NIV translation. As I said when we began our analysis of verse 27 the end of this verse provides the reader with → **‘The ‘One & Only’ Requirements, to Be an Inhabitants of the New Jerusalem—which at this Point in Time—Should be Considered as a → BENEFIT THAT WILL LAST FOR ALL OF ETERNITY.**

This verse has two basic sub-sets:

ONE: “...but only those...” In these three words God states that He/God is going to narrow down the **‘created human being’**; (of all the created human beings that have ever been created) that will be allowed to enter the **‘New Jerusalem—Earth—Heaven’**. Remember Jesus states this in scripture: **Matt. 7:13-14, “Enter through the narrow gate. → For wide is the gate and wide is the road that leads to destruction, → and many will enter through it. → But small is the gate and narrow is the road that leads to life, → and only a few will find it.”** I am not

sure why God starts these verses (Matt. 7:13-14) off by talking about the **'Path to Salvation and Heaven'** and then; Shifts and begins talking about the **'Path to Hell'** and then returns to discussing the **'Path to Salvation and Heaven'**. However, I do think it is worth noticing that in these two verses, God provides the reader with some level of **'Magnitude/Numbers in Each Group'**.

First Group — The Unsaved: **"For wide is the gate and wide is the road that leads to destruction, → and many will enter through it."**

Second Group – The Saved: **"But small is the gate and narrow is the road that leads to life, → and only a few will find it."**

Now go back and look at the words in our verse, **"...but only those..."** To me these three words indicate: **'Only a Small Portion of the Total Amount of the People, Who Have Been Born/Created: "and only a few will find it"** However, the number that **'Will Reject God and His Free gift of Salvation'**, will be **"...and many will enter through it."** Again, a very good day for some and a very bad day for many!

In the last part of this verse, God will define **'The Specific Requirement'** for the group who was just defined as, **"...but only those..."**

TWO: **"...whose names are written in → the Lamb's book of life."** It appears to me that God makes this requirement very short and simple: **"...whose names are written in → the Lamb's book of life."** If you look back at the entire Bible; I think you will find out that the bible list many; **'Reasons that a Human Can be Kept Out of the New Creation'**. In the first part of our verse, God list three: **"impure—abomination—deceitful"**. These types of list are presented by God throughout the Bible to make sure men are well informed about **'Gods Rules'**, as well as, the judgements. If you go back to Romans, 1:28-32, you will find at least 20-25 of these types of sins that will keep you out of heaven, **'If they go unrepented'**. Again, both the Old & New Testament provide the reader with all of these type of sins that will keep you out of the **'New Creation → Again, If they go Unrepented'**

(Key Concept: Man can obtain salvation/repentance from God as a free gift, therefore → Man is without Excuse.)

In our verse God has **“only”** established **‘one criteria’**, that will **‘Allow You into the New Creation’**, which is → **“...whose names are written in → the Lamb’s book of life.”** Therefore, the real question for everyone who has ever lived is → **How Do You Get Your Name Written in the → “...Lamb’s book of life.”** And, again, God makes this process very clear in the Bible, therefore, **no man can say that they did not know the way to the ‘New Creation’**. There are many places within scripture that **‘Clearly State—How This Process Works, and What is Required of Humans to → Get Their Name Written in the lambs Book of Life’**. The **‘Lambs Book of Life’** has been defined by several names in the Old & New Testament, however, the meaning is the same in both the Old & New Testament.

- 1) Ex. 32:31-33, Speaks from the **‘Unsaved Side’**, **“So Moses went back to the Lord and said, ‘Oh, what a great sin these people have committed! They have made themselves a god of gold. But now, please forgive their sin—but if not, then blot me out of the book you have written. The Lord replied to Moses, ‘Whoever has sinned against Me I will blot out of My book’.”**
- 2) Ps. 69:27-28, Speaks from the **‘Unsaved Side’**, **“Charge them with crime upon crime; do not let them share in your salvation. May they be blotted out of the book of life and not be listed with the righteous.”**
- 3) Dan. 12:1, Speaks from the **‘Saved Side’**, **“At that time the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered.”**
- 4) Rev. 13:8, Speaks from the **‘Unsaved Side’**, **“All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life belongs to the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world.”**

- 5) **Rev. 20:15**, Speaks from the **'Unsaved Side'**, **"If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire."**
- 6) **Phil. 4:3**, Speaks from the **'Saved Side'**, **"Yes, and I ask you, loyal yoke-fellows, help these women who have contended at my side in the cause of the gospel, along with Clements and the rest of my fellow workers, whose names are in the book of life."**
- 7) **Rev. 17:8b**, Speaks from the **'Unsaved Side'**, **"The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come."**

I listed 5 verse that talk about the **'Unsaved Side of this Equation'** & 3 from the **'Saved Side of the Equation'**. Actually there are many verses in scripture that speak to this issue/concept and it appears that more than 50% are from the **'Unsaved Side'** –Which appears to tie in closely with my view of, **'What God is Trying to Get Across in Our Verse'**. Again, just my opinion, read and make up your own mind.

This concludes our analysis of Chapter 21—Now we will move to chapter 22, which will be the final chapter of the **'Book of Revelation'**.